

# The Simple Life of Killing Demons



# The Simple Life of Killing Demons

Alternative Name: 弑魔者的简单生活

Author: ☆Crazy→Mosquito★ (☆疯狂→蚊子★)

Category: Chinese Web Novel, Comedy, Harem, Fantasy

Status: Ongoing

Source: <http://book.sfacg.com/Novel/31548/MainIndex/>

Translator(s)/Translation Group: Alyschu&Co

Subscribe: RSS

Description

Imagination is always pleasant, but reality is cruel. I just wanted a simple life but why am I always getting into trouble?

Synopsis by alyschu

Dense protagonist is thrown in a parallel world.

# SLKD – Glossary

<http://moonbunnycafe.com/the-simple-life-of-killing-demons/slkd-glossary/>

## Characters

Satsuki Risa – only girl friend

Lin Xiang – MC

Lin Hao – uncle of MC

Takahashi Nobuhiko – friend

Yamada Yukihiro – bully

– Sekisawa

– Ichikun

– Ichimin

– Ichimen

Silent Water – water spirit

Kamiki Kuji – class monitor

Genuoduolasu – a grieess fire demon (deceased)

Yalide – black dragon

Freed – white dragon

Ijima Meiko – English teacher

Ijima Michita – headmaster

## Locations

Northern Sea High School – original world's school

Pillar Nofu Academy – spirit user academy

## Ranks

Sorcerer class

Magician's Apprentice (Apprentice Magician)

Trainee Magician

Junior Magician

Intermediate Magician

Advanced Magician

Magus

Grand Magus

Saint Magus

Ruling Saint

Ruling God

Battle Technicians

Battle Scholar

Battle Master

Battle General

Battle King

Battle Emperor

Battle Spirit

Battle Ancestor

Battle Elder

Battle Saint

Battle God

Demon levels

Lesser Demon (the lowest demon)

Low Demon

Intermediate Demon

Superior Demon

Special Demon

King of Demons

# SLKD – Volume 1 Chapter 1-Volume 2 Ch 10

<http://moonbunnycafe.com/the-simple-life-of-killing-demons/slkd-volume-1-chapter-1>

Previous Chapter | Project Page | Next Chapter Volume 1 Chapter 1 – Saving Someone and Escaping Death to Another World “Ah~~~” Several extraordinary miserable screams are heard...

Previous Chapter | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 1 Chapter 1 – Saving Someone and Escaping Death to Another World**

“Ah~~~” Several extraordinary miserable screams are heard at sunset. Several badly bruised high school students fall in front of me, crying constantly.

“If you bastards make my vegetables rot, what shall I do?” I rub a beaten bruised face as I scold them.

I just came from the supermarket to buy food and met these assholes, claiming to be some kind of Satsuki Bodyguards. Telling me to stay far away from Satsuki. How weird.

I pick up my bicycle that fell by the roadside and sat on it’s seat. As I ride home on my bicycle I give them a cuss or two.

My name is Lin Xiang and I am Chinese. I came to Japan when I was only in the sixth grade of elementary school and have always been bullied since then. They hit me, kick me and said that my parents did not like me. I was very sad and hurt but nobody helped me. Nobody pitied me either and I was isolated from my classmates.

One day when I was being bullied by a group of male classmates, Takahashi Nobuhiko could not take it and he bravely stepped forward and told them to stop hitting me. Not only did they not pay any attention to his words, they bullied him too.

Because of that incident, Takahashi and I formed an unbreakable bond. Also because of that I vowed to become strong in order to fight back. I will not bully people but I also do not want to be bullied by others. Later on when they tried to

bully me, I fought back and beat them into a complete mess. They were never satisfied so they always come to me asking for a fight. In order to deal with them, I exercise often, so that when they come to get me they will get more than they bargained for.

The news of me being powerful reached their boss's ear and lately they always come with a bunch of people to fight me. When I first faced that many people, I was at a disadvantage but once I got used to it, I was not afraid anymore. At that time they also began to use weapons like iron bars and wooden sticks.

After I return to my empty home, I cook my meals, eat and wash my dishes. I take a bath afterwards and that is how my life usually goes on.

I use to have parents. They died in a traffic accident and when I was four years old my uncle Lin Hao took me in. He is a man of many talents and he use to be vice president of a famous company. I am very grateful for his support. In the sixth grade of elementary school when I transferred to Japan, he was promoted to the executive manager of that branch. You can tell how deeply the chairman of that company trusted him.

This year he turns thirty seven but he is still not married. I do not understand why a man who is as handsome as he is talented, is not married yet. I know for a fact that many women admire him too.

—————Time: June 4th, Monday. Location: School

“Lin Xiang, what's wrong with your face? Did you get in a fight again yesterday?” A girl with a well-developed chest said with a blaming tone as I put my bag in my drawer. She put both her hands on top of my desk.

I glanced at Satsuki: “So what if I got in a fight? Mind your own business.”

“You...” Her face flush in anger. She looks pretty cute when she is mad.

This girl's name is Satsuki Risa. She's my classmate and is the class president. She was in my class ever since the 2nd year of junior high until now, 1st year of high school.

How can this tomboy be called the Madonna by the male population of Northern Sea High School? Satsuki is beautiful with pure white skin and bright charming eyes. Her body is the golden ratio of 1:7 so I suppose she stands out

amongst the rest of the girls. She also has good grades so I guess she fully deserves to be the campus Madonna.

Yesterday, those idiotic people who claim to be Satsuki's bodyguards probably like her. Maybe they tried to "warn me" because I am a delinquent who is also close to her.

Satsuki's a very annoying girl. She does not meddle in other people's business but she likes to meddle in mine. I still do not understand how I offended her. Or is this how she repays her savior?

One day in the second grade of middle school, I wasted a lot of time when I was choosing my dinner ingredients so I went into the shortcut alley and saw her surrounded by small fry. They probably wanted to molest her or something.

Since she was one of my classmates — no, as long as I see anyone being bullied no matter what the reason was, I will bravely step forward. This is probably why I have offended so many people.

I put my groceries and school bag on the ground and ran at them. Two or three people already ran away because they had fought with me before and knew how strong I was. When they saw me, they ran away in with their head down.

"Student Lin Xiang?" Satsuki was crying at that time and I knew that she was really scared. From then on, even when I don't talk to her she finds me everyday, telling me to seriously study as if she was my mom or something! If I knew that this would happen, I would not have bothered to save her.

"Yo, Xiang, did you make Satsuki angry again?" Takahashi said as he pats me on the shoulder.

I look at Satsuki and see her small mouth pout, as if she is angry. But I am familiar with her so I know she is not really angry.

I rub her on the head and smile: "Oh high and mighty class president, this boy here has just hit puberty so he is a bit rebellious, please forgive him."

Satsuki slapped my hand away and said the same words that she always answers with: "You made me angry, I don't care about you ~~~ also, don't touch me."

Well ~~~ although she always tells me to not touch her, her face never showed signs of disgust. So I put my hand on her head and rub it like I would with a little kid: “Don’t be angry okay?”

“I don’t forgive you, I will never forgive you. Hateful Lin Xiang. I really won’t talk to you anymore.” She says as she sits back in her seat and sticks her tongue out cutely.

“So simple.” I laugh, facing Takahashi.

“Who’s simple?” asked Takahashi.

“Her.” Was it not clear that I was referring to Satsuki? She is just like a little kid.

“.....” Takahashi looks at me and shakes his head. With a sigh he said: “Well ~~~ not everyone is perfect, even the most outstanding people have their faults.”

“What?” I always think that Takahashi really likes to say things that other people don’t get.

“Nothing.” Takahashi said as he shakes his head again and returns to his seat. After a while, the school bell rang.

————— Lunch Break

I put my bento on my desk and Satsuki moves her desk next to mine.  
(TL: bento = lunch box)

This Satsuki, she said she won’t talk to me anymore but after class isn’t she back to talking to me again? However, she is always like this, so I am used to it.

“Are you going to eat in the cafeteria today?” Takahashi said as he walks by.

He looks at me. Then he looks at Satsuki and smiles: “Oh I do not want to be hated.” Then he walks out of the classroom.

“Hey~~~” What’s going on? Who is going to hate him?

In these two months since the beginning of high school, he never eats lunch with me anymore. We have always eaten our bento together with Satsuki since junior high. Is his mother too lazy to make him a bento?

“Waa~~~ deep-fried meat balls, Lin Xiang, do you like me or something? Recently you always make deep-fried meat balls.” Satsuki’s eyes shine as she opens my bento and see my deep-fried meat balls.

“Like you? Don’t make me laugh, you know that I like deep-fried meatballs too.”

“Don’t lie, didn’t you give me all of yours last time? If you like me, you can confess and maybe I will accept you.” Satsuki says as she grins happily displaying two small, cute dimples.

If you say that I fell in love with her, that is not possible. The reason why I had been making deep-fried meatballs for a week is because Satsuki’s favorite grandpa passed away last week. I only made them to comfort her.

I pat her on the head: “Thank you very much, dear “Risa-chan”. (only intimate people call each other by their first name and/or “chan” in japan)

Her face flushed like a ripe apple and she got angry: “Idiot, why are you suddenly being so close? Baka.” She put all the deep-fried meat balls in her bento and ate in a hurry

“You’re eating too fast, don’t choke.” What did I do to make her mad this time?

“Hmph~~~ I’m eating lunch, ignoring you” She glared at me through the corner of one eye and continue to eat her bento.

I feel that when we got into high school Satsuki changed and became difficult to understand. Is it because we are always together that no boys confess to her anymore?

At that time, Yamada Yukihiro knocked against my table. I look him in the eye and he immediately said sorry.

This Yamada Yukihiro is a bully and when we became high schoolers he fell in love with Satsuki. He often pesters her. Maybe because he was jealous of our good relationship, on the 3rd day of high school he brought a gang of people to beat me.

That fool. Me against 10 or so people? No problem. He pit 7 useless people

that only know how to scare people with wooden sticks to fight against me. Of course I beat them up. After all, I am Japan's National Youth Champion in boxing and kendo. It is hard to humiliate me.

From then on, he did not dare to be around Satsuki but he still occasionally provokes me. If he sees my face change, he will pale and shrink back. That bastard bullies the weak but fears the strong.

I will never acknowledge that kind of person.

— — — — — After school

"Ah, today's sunset is so beautiful" Satsuki said as we walk along the coastal road.

"Yeah~~~ if you hold your own bag, it will be so much more beautiful." Every time Satsuki goes home, she makes me take her home and carry her bag. But that's fine because the supermarket is near her home and I can take her home on the way. Also this girl is close to me so I am afraid that she will be attacked.

"Tch~~~ There are a lot of people who want to hold it, so don't be so unsatisfied." Satsuki has a proud look on her face.

"Yes yes, the super glamorous narcissistic Risa-chan." This girl is way too narcissistic, right?

"Pa ~ " Satsuki heavily hit me on the shoulder: "Go to hell! The setting sun stained Satsuki's face with its red color, making her look very beautiful.

"You are so poisonous. You usually always rely on me, now you want me to die? I laugh.

"Hmph~~~ You are better off dead." Satsuki sticks out her pink tongue again.

"If I die, who would be as stupid as me, the person who always listens to young miss?"

As I finish talking, I see a disturbing scene in front of me...

— — At an intersection, a kid is riding on a tricycle but at the other side, a truck is speeding towards him.

"Hey! What are you doing? Hey?" Satsuki said as I drop her bag, probably

thinking that I was angry.

I ignore Satsuki and silently repeated in my heart: “I can catch up, I can catch up...”

Since I wished for it that strongly, sure enough, I caught up to the kid riding on the tricycle but I can not grab him in time so I kick him away.

“Bang!” I hear a heavy crashing sound and Satsuki’s piercing cry.

My body feels empty and I feel like I am flying in the air. My body starts to ache and I black out...

“Plop” Huh? How come it is hard to breathe? And my nose is choking, this is... sea water? Ah, I was hit by a car and flew into the sea. This occurs often near this coastal road, that a person gets hit by a car drops in the sea.

I manage to open my eyes. My eyes sting and the sunset dyed red water gets farther and farther away from me. My body is not in pain anymore. And I don’t hear Satsuki’s sad desolate cry anymore...

In the darkness of the sea, I see two big things come from the endless water. Is it a shark? Maybe they smell the scent of my blood... I close my eyes and calm my heart. There is no trace of fear in my heart. Is this the legendary calm before dying?

So hot !!! Suddenly, my body is on fire...

“Waa~~~ hot hot hot.” I open my eyes and a black flame is burning on top of my body. Scared, I try to put it out as fast as I can...

Ah ? !!!

In front of me there is a flame-like black substance. When I look around I see an abandoned factory. I pinch my face. Was I dead?

Suddenly my head started to hurt...

– Since ancient times, it has been said that God is the creator of the world. But this is not true, God’s duty is to protect the world. All things must die, God will inevitably die as well. As he was dying, he gave his power to his mount, the Dragon God, the dragon’s ancestor.

After God's death, everything changed. God's mercy and kindness was no longer in effect. Since then, the "hatred, revenge," and bad thoughts that accumulated after a person's death became a "demon".

Spiritual objects that absorb the sun and moon's essence became a "spirit" .

The ones living in heaven are God's people, also known as an "angel". They were deeply saddened by God's departure but they did not have time to grieve because the spirits and demons who thrive on human souls attacked. It was so sudden. Angels only support the world, where would they get offensive magic? In order to protect the heaven and the human world, the Dragon God destroyed most of the demons at the expense of its own life. There were only few left. Even though those leftovers were weak demons, they were enough to become a huge threat to the human world. In order to protect themselves, humans trained themselves and developed spiritual power. People who have spiritual power are called spirit users.

The angels worked hard to practice their magic for the humans and themselves. They developed "light magic" in order to counter the demon's "dark magic". They did not know this but it was actually the Dragon God's remaining energy. The Dragon God finally fulfilled its promise with God to "take care of the world."

The war between humanity, angels, and demons. God's death is only the beginning... —-《The World's Story, Appendix》

People with spiritual powers are divided into two categories: Sorcerers and Battle Technicians.

The Sorcerer class is divided into ten ranks: Magician's Apprentice, Trainee Magician, Junior Magician, Intermediate Magician, Advanced Magician, Magus, Grand Magus, Saint Magus, Ruling Saint, Ruling God. The Sorcerer's magic is the transformation of spiritual power.

The Battle Technician class is divided into ten ranks as well: Battle Scholar, Battle Master, Battle General, Battle King, Battle Emperor, Battle Spirit, Battle Ancestor, Battle Elder, Battle Saint, Battle God. A battle technician directly attacks with spiritual power. Damage dealt is proportional to their spiritual power.

Every rank only needs to reach level five to rank up. —《Basic Knowledge of Spiritual Power》

What are these memories? I cover my eyes and squinted, a dark flame is floating in front of me — a demon...

The lowest demon, a newly born demon. Although it is a lesser demon, it already absorbed small human grievances, has an inferior ability. Anyone with a general ability to fight can handle them.

Low demon. Evolved from the lowest demons, demons at this level can use dark magic.

Intermediate demon. Demons at this level start to develop intelligence, they become harder to deal with.

Superior demon. Strong demon, they have certain amounts of intelligence, they know how to use tricks, and they have strong demonic power, demons at this level become extremely difficult to fight against.

Special demon. Very strong demon, they have only appeared twice in recent years. Both times angels were there to help.

King of demons. A legend, never before seen. ———《Demon Basic Illustrations, Appendix》

Demon Illustrations Handbook? What is this? Ah~~~ My headache is getting worse.

“Dammit, why is my spiritual power this weak? ‘I’ punch the wall, crying.

“You are always a burden in every class team battle, aren’t you embarrassed?” The class monitor, Kamiki Kuji, said in a haughty voice. Who the hell’s Kamiki Kuji? I don’t know this guy, but why do I have this guy’s memory?

“Dammit, I am really weak.” ‘I’ hide in bed crying. Strange, when was I that timid ?

“You, there is no point in reading books. The only thing useful in this world is spiritual power.” The homeroom teacher does not look at ‘me’.

“Hey, Lin Xiang the failure, help me buy a drink, use your own money.” Yamada Yukihiro said to ‘me’. Yamada Yukihiro? The guy that only turns around when I

look at him? What's going on?

“Ha ha, trashy Lin Xiang...”

“Baka Lin Xiang...”

“Junior High School student Lin Xiang...”

“Ha ha ha ha ha ha...”

A large amount of memories flood into my mind...

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 1 Chapter 2 – Resurrection, a Spirit, and my New Life**

So that's how it is... I landed in a parallel world? The only difference was that there are demons in this world ! ?

After my brain finished processing these vague memories, I suddenly understood.

The black flame in front of me was a demon? When I looked at it, I suddenly feel a little bit afraid, but that is probably from this world me's memory. This demon require human souls to level up and I am in danger of having my soul sucked away from me... but why does the outline on the demon's face look surprised?

Hold up, a demon's dark magic devours life so I should be dead... no... this world's 'me' was dead. Then I came from another world into this world me's body... and what? I went into confusion. Why am I here?

“Impossible, impossible. How can a human not die in the midst of my hellfire? How is that possible? I clearly saw your soul disappear, how did you revive? The demon collapsed and looked as if it was insane.

Huh? The girl behind me is shivering and watching me with wet moist eyes. This beautiful dark blue haired girl is...

'I' was in a bad mood so I went to walk along the creek near my home. I found a human spirit that could only be found in stories. 'I' immediately ran to her to greet her. I did not notice a demon appear when I went to say hello. It was a

Griess (fire demon). Then this world's me grabbed her and ran into the abandoned factory around 100 meters away from my home (It was a pretty big factory in this world). I then got hit by it's fire.

"I must have missed, this kid obviously knows illusion magic. Yes, I must have seen wrong. But out of all the demons, the Griess demon is the most powerful spirit hunter. I, Genuoduolasu am also a Superior demon! How else can my flame not burn off this mongrel's soul that I do not even want to eat? The demon mumbled to itself and started to cast a few spells.

You don't want to eat my spirit? I started to feel faint. Even the demon looked down on the spirit of the me in this world. To not even be considered as food, the me in this world, how much of a trash are you...

This is really funny. This demon is actually a Superior demon. In this world I am as weak as anyone can be, how could I possibly have used magic to confuse a Superior demon? Even an Advanced Magician could not have done it. This stupid demon. This is what I thought in my head, I am not stupid enough to actually say that out loud. No, even if I did not say anything, the fact that am still alive is enough mockingly enough.

"Human, be honored. You are the first person I met that did not die to my Hellfire Meteor Bomb but I wont be deceived twice..." The demon named Genosomething said. A black-like round table appeared. That big dark magic must be the one that shoots the Hellfire Meteor bomb? That name is really stupid, but I must escape now. That demon's dark magic is nothing to sneeze at...

"Bang, bang, bang." As I was escaping the stupid bomb fireball or whatever shot out quickly. Although it's speed was fast, I could probably dodge it in a split second. But... there was a girl behind me.

"Hot... hot..." Well, the black hellfire bomb hit me and started to burn. I'm going to burn to death.. ehh? It's not hot anymore?

Another one hit me and I feel it burning against my skin. Then it stopped burning. When the flame was burning, it seems like it went inside my body? It is not trying to devour my life right? With this strong of a dark magic attack, I should have already have died multiple times already...

The Gelimisu? or whatever demon, saw that I was alive and roared like a crazy

beast: “ Even if you use illusions, I won’t be tricked, I will hit you. You damn kid !!  
!”

“Hey.” I wanted to tell him that I did not use any magic and actually did get hit by the fireballs but he started to launch his spell again. I squat down in front of the girl behind me and protected her head: “Can you... escape... his... attack... range? Dammit, it was so hot. Because of this hot pain, I had some problems getting my words out. I don’t know why I could not be swallowed up by dark magic, but if this continues I will probably die from pain.

The girl stared at me as she nodded her head.

“Okay, I will help you block the flames, you must run away now.”

The girl was stunned by my words but got her trembling legs in order and sprinted behind the bunker.

“Go to hell, go to hell.” That stupid thing went completely bonkers...

“Pop”. “Ahh~~~~” The girl cried as a fireball hit her leg and the black flame started to burn...

“Hey !” Seeing this, I start to get angry: “Only a coward would hit attack a girl. Unforgivable.” I rush at the demon and send the demon flying. It probably flew about seven or eight meters.

“Ahh~~~ ahh~~~ woo~~~ woo~~~”The girl could not slap the black flame off her leg. Using water magic, she could not douse this inextinguishable eternal flame...

Immediately, I came over and try to pat the flames on her leg away myself. The girl’s snow white leg was scalded into an ugly red.

Damn that demon. What if it left a scar on this beautiful flawless white leg? It deserves to die.

The girl’s eyes were becoming red because of her sobbing. As I was patting the flame, I rub her head: “Hey, stop crying, okay?” I don’t know why but when I see a girl cry, my mind becomes a mess.

I turn around and see the stupid demon still muttering to himself: “Impossible, impossible”

I got angrier and angrier. I hate it when people bully the weak but it really hits my nerve even more when a girl gets bullied. I clench my fist and a white flame envelops my right hand. I stared as the white flame seemed to gobble up his black flame...

“Ahh~~~ impossible, impossible, sacred fire? How... can... a human.... have a dragon’s ability? Is this guy using his illusions again?” The demon’s dark face twitched: “I won’t be tricked, I won’t. I know you are manipulating my senses and you are trying to make me feel the flame’s purification. Haha, I won’t be fooled.”

“What kind of rubbish is this guy spouting now? So noisy.” As I run in the direction of the demon, it became frightened and tried to flee.

I punch him hard in the back and it got engulfed in the white flame. He flew maybe around ten meters away. After a split second, it disappeared into the air.

With the me in this world’s memory, I knew that the smoke only appears after a demon dies.

The white flames quickly disappeared from my hands afterwards. Instead of being stunned by the fact that I sent a Superior demon flying, I walked back to the girl.

The girl raised her head to look at me. She stopped crying and her red eyes on her beautiful face makes a person pity her. I asked: “Can you walk? I can take you to my place.”

She shakes her head. Looks like she is unable to walk.

I crouch down and said to her: “Then get up, I will carry you.”

The girl tried to stand up. “Ahh ~~~” She let out a painful cry and sat down again.

I stood up and took a proper look at her. I notice that this girl, no, this human-like spirit was actually very pretty. She had an exquisite delicate face with flawless skin. Her big watery eyes were mature and beautiful.

However, at the moment, her face was a pale lifeless color.

I scratch my head in thought. Then I wrap my left arm around her waist and

cradled her feet with my right arm.

She struggled a bit. Even if there was dirt on her face, I can see that she had flushed in embarrassment.

I felt something from my body enter her body. I could not describe what it was but the feeling disappeared after a few seconds.

I put my fingers on her face to wipe away the dirt and smiled: "Hold on, we're almost there."

I don't know if it was because of what I said but she suddenly stilled and then nestled in my arms like a kitten...

I have never hugged a girl before but I think the girl in my arms should be around 1.7 meters tall. She was so light though. Are all women made out of water? Huh? Her head is smoking and a "gulu gulu" boiling sound came out... Her temperature has increased and her beautiful red face felt as hot as burning iron. Don't tell me that she has a fever?

"Hey, are you alright?" I started to get worried.

I see her shake her head but her eyes were spinning in circles. She seems to be nervous? I got it. She must be shy.

We left the factory after I purified all the black flames in the area.

After we left the abandoned factory, I realized that this was that famous iron-making factory in my world. Over here, it was an abandoned factory.

I guess in this parallel world, anything can happen. I shake my head and started to walk home.

My home in this world was pretty remote. The nearest building from my home was that 100 meter away abandoned factory. Not only was it far away, the land was cheap and nobody lived around here. If you asked why the land wasn't good, it is because it has been heard that the cracks connecting the demon world appear frequently here. But this world's me have never seen such a thing in his entire life.

"We're here." I open the door. My home in this world was different from my previous world's home. It was a flat roofed three story villa that covered a large

area. This world's uncle was very rich but he was cheated. I still remember the time when he naively laughed and said: "Ha ha, he sold me such a cheap place, what a fool..." He now realized who the real fool was...

However I think this place is safe. At least, 'I' have never been attacked in this world... until today...

I put the girl on the sofa and looked through the medicine cabinet. I find a bottle of sterilized water to clean the wound but... was it enough to clean this kind of burn? I was used to applying medicine on myself because I always got into fights. I look at her injury again and felt that it was probably OK. I have never used it for a burn but when I look at her leg, it seemed like the burn had faded a bit and had already started to heal.

No matter what other people say, using sterilized water on any injury was no problem. I picked up a cotton swab and dipped it in the distilled water. I gently applied the water. "Ah ~" She moaned as her leg winced.

"Does it hurt?"

The girl cutely nodded her head like how Satsuki does, giving me a little sister kind of feeling. I smiled as I rub her head: "If it hurts, then don't move. Are you hungry? I'll go make something for you." The refrigerator was pretty empty... but I think I still had some eggs and noodles?

The girl cutely stared at me, blushing into a red color again. How strange, no matter how you look at her, she was obviously was the mature silent type. Why did she look so cute? Satsuki's cuter but why do I feel my heart beat? Is this the way people feel when they see their sister growing up?

I cannot explain this sensation. It is a sweet and sour kind of feeling.

As I wash the pots and pans that had never been used before, I sigh. This world's me really knows how to enjoy life. Although this world's uncle and my world's uncle were always busy working, which was why they rarely were home, the sixth grade me in the other world was completely different than the me in this world.

Well, I remembered how to make noodle soup... I recalled how my uncle made it and started to make it.

About ten minutes later, I completed the Plain Noodle Soup that my uncle always made for me whenever he came home, back when we were in China. (Since there weren't enough ingredients, it wasn't really a plain noodle soup though).

I suddenly feel a homesickness for my previous world but this world seemed to be more fun. Well ~~ anyway, time will always go on. There are probably tons of other parallel worlds out there anyway. Anything can happen in this world. I'm tired of all the days of fighting other people. Even though 'I' am viewed as a low leveled nerd and is held in disdain here, I am probably stronger here than I was in my previous world. Besides, I can fight demons. Also it seems like I can transform spiritual power into magic in this world. That could be fun.

But why are my parents dead in this world too? Had I always been doomed to lose my parents at a such young age?

My parents died in a car accident in my previous world but here, they were killed in action...

As I thought about it, I could not help but feel sorry for myself.

Aftering making the noodles, I walked out of the kitchen. The girl was using water magic on her wound but immediately stopped when she saw me.

Now that I think about it, she is a water sprite. Legends say that spirits have a special aura around them. I remember that the me in this world recognized what she was. Was why he blindly ran at her and got scorched to death? I look up and down at the girl's tattered clothes and shook my head.

I could not see anything.

Since there is no food in the house, I made some noodles. Try them." I put the bowl down on the table and stabbed the chopsticks in the noodles.

The girl stared at the noodles for a while and then she held the chopsticks. She skillfully used the chopsticks to suck the noodles in her mouth. I could not describe how she held the chopsticks but suddenly, they fell on the floor.

Oh right, she was a spirit, how did she usually eat her food?

I see about to her crouch down to pick up the chopsticks and hurriedly

stopped her: “Ah, you don’t have to pick that up, let me do it.” I stepped forward and picked up the chopsticks. I was scared that the friction of her crouching would make her injury worsen so I did that. Then again, why does it look as if her wound was already almost completely healed?

I looked at her beautiful white leg and saw that the part of her leg that use to be an ugly red, had become pink and was close to her original skin color.

She must really be a spirit, her ability to heal herself was simply amazing.

I put the chopsticks on the table and picked up her bowl. I held it against her pink lips and said: “I don’t own any forks so you have to eat it this way. I’ll go out and buy some later.”

She hesitated. She looked at me. Then she looked at the noodles. Since she didn’t want to embarrass me, she slightly opened her mouth and slowly slurped it in her mouth. She covered her mouth and widened her big watery eyes: “It’s delicious.”

This was the first time I heard her speak. Her voice was very soft and melodic to my ears.

The first thing she said were words of praise. This made me feel very happy because she is the first person to tell me that the food I make was delicious.

I laugh. “Since it’s delicious, have some more.”

Without restraint, she gulped it all down and even ate my share. After finishing all the noodles, she realized what she did and apologized. I did not care as long as she was happy.

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

### **Volume 1 Chapter 3 – Magic, a Runaway and Trouble**

“Mom and I have always been running from the spirit hunter, the fire demon Genuoduolasu. Dad died trying to protect us. We were powerless and could only run away to the human world. My mom died protecting me and bought me some time to run away. I stopped to catch my breath at a brook and that was when you came over to say hello. You then saw the demon, grabbed my hand

and desperately fled to that big old place. Then you got hit by his hellfire.” As she finished talking, her tears streamed down her face. I guess she was remembering the terrors in her past.

“Oh right, what is your name?” I tried to change the topic to lessen her terror. Then again, I really didn’t know what her name was.

“Silent Water.”

“Silent Water? That name sounds really pretty, it suits you.” She blushed again. I felt like she was way too shy.

“Ahh~~ anyways. You can live in my home... No no no, I do not have any hidden intentions. I am just worried about you because it is dangerous outside. You also do not know anyone so you should stay here for now.” It really was dangerous here. Even if there was no demon threat. The spirit slave sellers would go crazy when they catch sight of her.

Silent Water hesitated. Then she said: “Then, I’ll be in your care.”

“Alright. You should go take a bath now.” I look at the torn and tattered clothing on her body.

“I don’t know what to eat tonight... I should go and buy her some clothes first.” I mutter.

“Take a bath?” Silent Water’s voice pitched higher as she quickly shook her head.

“Yeah, take a bath.” What’s wrong?

-----

“Why are you acting so weird?” I don’t understand why Silent Water stiffened and clasped her hands together.

“Uh... if you don’t mind, you can change into my clothes.” I hand her a sweatshirt.

“This... is my first time... that I have taken a shower with a guy, so... if I do anything wrong, please forgive me.”

“Eh . ! ? What.. did you say?” I listen to her every word 20% more carefully

than I normally do.

“I said... this is my first time... taking a bath with a guy...” Silent Water slowly whispered every word out.

“No no no, why? Why would you be taking a bath with me?” My voice trembled as I picture what she said in my head. Her snow-white body appeared in my imagination and I felt kind of dizzy. What a strong impact....

“But, that was not what you meant?”

“No, no, I did not mean that. Girls and boys cannot bathe together.”

“Ah, cannot bathe together.” Silent Water sighed in relief. Did she think I was a bad guy? Although I cannot be considered a good guy either.

“Your face is kind of red, do you have a fever?” Silent Water’s expression had changed. Did I really see a flash of disappointment across her face when I told her that we cannot bathe together?

“My face?” I rub my face. It was really hot, dang it, am I really that low? I only imagined it for a while... ah, I feel kind of giddy.

“Okay, here is the switch, this is the towel, this is.. I should go.” By now, I felt really guilty in front of this beautiful. I am such a bastard, to insult her in this way. I quickly ran out of the bathroom and took my wallet and phone with me as I went out. I walked to the entrance towards my bicycle.

“Eh? Where’s my bike?” I could not find my bike that I usually left near the entrance. Did it get stolen?

I stared blankly at the entrance for a while until I realized what was going on. I mutter: “Oh right, this is a different world. I don’t own a bike in this world... Usually I stay at home and never go out. I only go out to buy groceries and help Takahashi at work anyway.

“Damn.” I kicked the little pebbles on the ground. “I don’t own a bike and the road is really long, how unlucky.”

In my original world, aside from walking to school, I always traveled by bike. Not having a bike here is really inconvenient.

However, the me without a bike discovered a lot of new things as more and

more people appeared on the road before me.

Although the road didn't change much, the buildings practically multiplied. There were spirit selling stores, magic book stores, magic item stores, and weapon stores. There are also people who were wearing long mage robes. If this was in my original world, if it wasn't at the cosplay section of Akihabara (Japanese Electronic Street), they would get stared at as if they were exotic animals or aliens.

I stopped in front of the women's clothing store. Today is Sunday so there are tons of people here. Or should I say tons of girls in here. I saw Kamiki Kuji, my class monitor. I know she saw me but she did not bother to greet or look at me. Whatever. She was a spiteful girl so I did not want to have anything to do with her anyway.

The shop was full of young women. I was the only boy in here so I was somewhat embarrassed. Why aren't there other guys here buying things with their girlfriend? I randomly picked some girl clothes and left... to go to the male restricted section... of the underwear area...

I immediately bought a few pieces, checked it out, and rushed out of the store. I saw amusement in Kamiki Kuji's eyes and I know that by tomorrow, everyone would know that I bought women lingerie.

I sighed: "I would never have thought that in my new life I would be labelled as a pervert who buys lingerie."

I suddenly felt very tired. I dragged my tired body into the supermarket and bought some food and water. I also bought household items that Silent Water would need; such as toothbrush, towels, *etc.*

When the bill arrived, I incidentally saw underwear on a counter. I suddenly felt that I would be better off dead. If I knew that they sold underwear here, I would not have went into that store full of women and bought underwear. I swear the girls there had an abnormal look in their eye as they looked at me with an "Is this guy really buying underwear?" sort of expression.

Exhausted, I went home.

In just one day, I had my first experience with death, my first fight with a

demon and won. I also bought women's underwear for the first time, even if it was under the strange gazes of the young women there...

Ah... I don't want to live anymore... eh? Weird. Since when was I so concerned about the opinion of others? Before the change, I would not have even cared... no... the previous me would never have had to buy that sort of underwear. The reason why I would care about what others think was probably because that was what the me of this world thought. He probably wanted other people to think highly of him and cared about what they thought of him.

As I pondered over this useless problem, I had already arrived home. At this time, the sun had already touched the mountain top.

By the way, what day is it today? I remember that before I died, the sun was already setting. Why had the sun only start to set here?

I took out my cellphone and looked at the calendar. -- June 3rd, yesterday? How weird, I went to school today and clearly remember that it was Monday.

Did the space travel generate this time difference and let me go to another world's yesterday?

Oh~~ well, I do not care about Einstein's theory of relativity since I don't really understand it. I don't even want to understand it anyway. As I stand in front of my entrance, I wondered about this unimportant reasoning. I have already traveled through to this world, who cares if I do not know what time it is? Maybe this world's nerdy me caused this problem.

If I think about it, the two mes of different worlds are completely different. I don't like studying but I know how to do housework in that world but it is the complete opposite in this world.

Deep in thought, I opened the door. I saw Silent Water on the sofa in my sweater.

After her bath, Silent Water looked like a water lily, beautiful. She was the only girl I have ever laid eyes upon, aside from Satsuki.

Although I knew she was a beautiful girl, but it still surprised me. She had rosy skin and there was a mysterious feeling when I look at her blue black hair. It was a fascinating feeling. In the sweatshirt, she looked more energetic than before.

As soon as she saw me come home, she went over to the entrance and said:  
“Welcome back.”

Silent Water was so polite, and I have never been welcomed back before!

-----

I gave all the bags to Silent Water and turned on the TV. After a while, I was relieved of my “I want to die” feeling and suddenly remembered that I wanted to learn magic.

Magic is the conversion of spiritual power. Unless someone is very skilled, magicians usually use magical items to cast spells. Magic items can convert spiritual power with the minimum amount of energy lossage but if it was a really good magical item, the magic spell could become more powerful.

I remember that I had a special magic wand given to students by the school in my bedroom drawer. I ran to the second floor and opened my room. My room was basically a small library. The room of about 60 square meters had 6 or 7 shelves filled to the brim with books.

I opened my desk drawer and it took me a while to find the school’s magic wand. In this world, ‘my’ spiritual power was too low and ‘I’ could not cast any kind of offensive magic. So ‘I’ bought an expensive wand that could conjure up a small tornado. That was how I passed my high school entrance exam.

The black stick in my hand looked like a chopstick. It was even the same size. I weigh it in my hand: “Why is thing so light? Don’t tell me it was just an ordinary stick.”

No matter what, other people have used this stick to cast magic. I should also be able to use it too then.

Since I have defeated that Superior demon, I had a newfound confidence in my heart.

I look at the table and opened a black magic book. I could not help but laugh: “Ah, the nerdy me, since you can’t do it, I will help you complete your journey.”

I found an easy transportation spell, a small wind spell and waved the stick in my hand. As I recited the magic spell...

Nothing happened.

This must be a mistake. I tried again and...

A “pfft” sound was heard and the magic wand started to emit smoke.

“Fuck.” I threw the magic wand onto the floor. “Am I getting trolled?? I have already beaten a Superior demon!”

I stepped on it a couple of times. Then I angrily sat in the chair.

Goddammit, isn't it just a little magic spell? I close my eyes as my heart struggled.

“Imagine the magic that you want to cast in your head and make it become real.” I try to not think about the little reminder written in the magic book's appendix and tried to imagine a tornado circling around me, with me at it's center.

It had not even been a second into my fantasy when I heard “peng peng peng, bang bang bang” sounds coming from all around me. The sound of things crashing against one another.

I open my eyes and find that the book shelves, desk, bed, wardrobe, clothes, and other things were continuously colliding in front of me, no, in a circle around me! Is there wind wall?

Did this mean that I succeed?

I was at the center of a large tornado. I was so happy that I shouted out in joy.

“Pa.” My underwear hit me on the head. As I grab my flying pants, I finally realized that my things were still flying around me.

The tornado ignored me and I panicked. When did it become so big?

If this continues, the entire house would be destroyed. What do I do?

“Use your heart to feel your magic, it will change according to the owner's thoughts.” I quickly wished for it to disappear and sure enough, the tornado vanished.

I could not be happy anymore as I looked at all the things in my room fall down. Even the door was blown off.

I hear Silent Water's footsteps right before she came in. She asked: "What happened?"

When she saw my messy room that looked as if a war took place in here, she screamed: "Kyaa~~ what happened?"

"Nothing, nothing." I could not say that I did it myself. Magic is so scary.

"But..." Silent Water still looked a little worried.

"It's really nothing, I just.... fell?" This excuse was probably too weak. I squat down and start to pick up my books and propped the table up.

"Oh it was like that, are you okay?" She actually believed me! Silent Water was too easy to trick! Was it because she was a spirit?

"Let me help you." Silent Water also crouched down to help me clean up.

——— One hour later.....

"Ahh~~~ thank you... Silent Water." I lay down panting on top of my bed, tired out of my mind. The me in this world really loves to read, he probably owned thousands of books.

"No no no, I should be doing this." Even though I cannot see her expression from here, I can hear the tiredness in her voice.

Fortunately, aside from the window and door, the bed, chair, table, and other things in the room were not badly damaged. Lucky me.

From now on, I would not dare to randomly use magic anywhere. I don't understand why people like magic. Its destructive power was so terrible.

What's up with the mini tornado spell? Is this really "mini"? The mini that I knew of are small things that do not go over 20 centimeters. My room is around 60 square meters. Don't tell me that mini tornados have a diameter of 8 meters or more? I turn the pages of the magic book and see that the spell was for a tornado of 8 cm in diameter. I suddenly had an urge to rip the book apart.

What kind of book is this? It gives even gives people false information. Looks like I cannot even believe in books anymore.

I was not angry anymore. That accident gave me an opportunity to some

spring cleaning. I put all the books in the bedroom in the empty room next door. The room next door can truly be called a library now.

As I look at my room that consisted of only an empty bed, two chairs, and a table, I felt like it was missing something.

Oh right, a computer. How can I be missing a computer? I ran my tired body up the stairs to the third floor and carried the unused stations I bought last year down the stairs.

Silent Water sat in a chair and tilted her head as she watched me bring the computer down. She cutely asked me: “ May I ask. what are those two boxes?”

“This, ah, this is called a computer.”

“Oh~~~ then does the other box it have animals inside it?” Silent Water’s eyes twinkled adorably. She was obviously not the cute type, why did I feel that she was cute?

“That, ah? That is called a television, a TV. It is one of humanity’s scientific technological products. It can broadcast programs, the animal world is one of the programs that it could play.

“Oh~~~ “ Silent Water didn’t really understand what I meant but she nodded her head anyway. She was like a studious student: “Then can this computer also play TV shows?”

“This so-called computer has a mechanical mind. It is very smart. It is better than the TV. You can watch programs that may not show up on the TV, play games, listen to music and lots of other things on it. You’ll get me after you see me using it.” I went back to the third floor to bring the keyboard and mouse down.

I connected the power supply, opened the computer, opened IE. But the page did change. What’s going on?

Silent Water sat next to me and had watched me refresh the browser for 5 minutes already. How can I disappoint this curious girl?

After 10 more minutes...

“Fuck, is the network cable not plugged in? I realized that I did not plug in the

network cable. When did I become such a scatterbrain? If the cable has not been plugged in, how could I even browse the net?

“Network cable?” Silent Waters could hear me speak chinese? Then again, for spirits, language was probably universal.

“Network cable is... it’s hard for me to explain but basically without it, the computer cannot watch TV or play games.” I ran up to the third floor to bring the network cable down.

I plugged it in and refreshed IE...

“Well... did not pay internet fee.” This world’s me basically did not use the computer. His books were basically his computer. Since he did not use the computer, he obviously did not have an internet bill.

“Internet fee?”

“Yes, like a TV, you have to pay a fee to see a show. Just like the lights that are on right now, if you do not pay the electricity bills, it would not light up.” I have really failed. I have disappointed Silent Water. Although she had a studious look on her face right now, she was probably a little bit disappointed.

Weird. When did I become so sentimental. I was originally a free and easy going person...

“So that’s how it is, humanity really has a lot of advanced knowledge.” Silent Water brightened and nodded her head.

Knowledge? This a darkness, everything requires money. Hmph~ I remembered an unpleasant memory from when my uncle from my previous world took me to Japan. Although he was the general manager, his starting salary was small because the branch had just opened. I was bullied when I first arrived in Japan and my pocket money was taken. From that day on, I saw the true nature of the world. The most important thing in the world was money. It was probably because of this that the me in my old world liked to save money. Totally different from the scaredy cat me in this world who pays people a protection fee of either 10,000 or 20,000.

(TL: Since they are still in Japan, I am assuming this is still in their yen currency. \$85 ~ \$170 USD)

Speaking of protection fee, looks like I have to teach Yamada Yukihiro another lesson in this world too. It was so weird, wasn't he a lvl 3 Battle Master?? He's always asking me for money. If it wasn't for the boy genius, my best friend, Takahashi Nobuhiko who was a lvl 2 Intermediate Magician, I'm afraid that I would have already been drained dry

Speaking of Yamada, I'm reminded of Satsuki. This world's Satsuki is the only female friend of the bookworm me in this world. She is gentle, easy to approach, and the goddess of the nerd Lin Xiang. But she was in love with my best friend, Takahashi. Yesterday, she called 'me' to help her with her confession.

Ey~ speaking of funny, when Satsuki called the nerd Lin Xiang, he was happy for 40 seconds until he picked up the phone. Then when Satsuki asked the nerd Lin Xiang to help her with a confession to Takahashi, he became devastated. That was why he wasn't in a good mood today and went for a walk along the river. And then met Silent Water.

Oh~ don't worry, nerd — no, I mean the me of this world. The things you did not finish in this world, I will finish for you. The people you want to protect, I will protect for you.

If it weren't for you, I probably could not have resurrected.

"Excuse me, what's wrong with you?" Silent Water asked.

"Huh? What's wrong with me?" My thoughts were interrupted by Silent Water.

"You were staring at the 'Unable to connect to Webpage' words for a long time."

"Oh~~~ I was lost in thought earlier."

I looked at the unmoving clock on the wall for the time and then stared at my watch: "It's already nine o' clock. Are you hungry? I can go downstairs to cook something up for you."

"Um." Silent Water's face was indescribable. She seemed to be very happy but she also looked embarrassed at the same time: "Can you please worry about yourself for a bit? From when you were packing away your things, your stomach had not stopped growling."

“Is that right? Haha” I scratched my head and laughed, embarrassed.

-----

“Do you need my help?” Silent Water entered the kitchen.

“Nah, you can just go out and watch TV.”

“No!” Silent Water yells very loudly, startling me. I turn around to look at Silent Water. She had a fierce look on her face but when she saw me turn around, she suddenly became timid: “ Uhm, sorry, I... did not mean to do that. But, uhm, I don’t want to live in your home and not do anything.”

“This is nothing, you don’t have to do this.”

“My mom always told me that I can’t get something for nothing, so... please let me help you? Silent Water’s eyes were determined so I could not refuse her.

“Okay. Come here, I’ll teach you.”

“Mhm~~ mhm~~” Silent Water suddenly became very enthusiastic.

-----

“Why do you have to wear that?” Silent Water points at my apron.

“Oh~ this? This prevents my clothes from getting dirty.”

“Oh~~~” Silent Water nodded her head.

“This is called a cucumber. We cut it like this.” I cut the cucumber into thin slices as Silent Water studied carefully by my side.

“This is called a pork chop. We must fry it.”

“This is...”

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 1 Chapter 4 – Breakfast, the Confession Plan, and Combat Training Simulation**

“There are less side dishes than usual but let’s eat anyway.” I said to Silent Water.

“Mhm! Waa! This fried pork chop is really delicious.” Silent Water said as she eats a piece of the fried pork chop and exaggeratedly praised me with her small mouth.

“Really ! If it’s delicious, eat some more.”

“This so called cucumber salad, also taste really good.”

“Haha, you don’t say.” Listening to Silent Water praise me made me very happy. I think, for a person who cooks all day, nothing is more musical to the ears than the word of praise, “delicious”.

“This thing called [Watercress](#) is really delicious, this is the first time I’ve eaten such delicious things.” Right now Silent Water looks like a little girl. So cute.

“Oh right, Silent Water, What did you eat in the demon world?” Haha, Silent Water’s praise made me happily ask. I was also curious about what spirits eat growing up.

“Water.”

“.....”

“What’s wrong?”

“Uh... nothing, nothing, drinking water is good, water is good.” Well I guess she had never eaten anything before which was why she said the food I made was delicious...

“Nothing will happen to you if you eat these right?” After hearing about Silent Water only drinking water, I start to get worried. Can spirits even eat food?

“I don’t know. I only know that the stuff you make taste really good.”

“I see.” Then I remembered. The nerd me had read an article about spirits and it said that spirits can eat food because they had the body structure of animals. When they come into the human world, they came by using a special kind of power. This power needs constant nourishment and they must consume something externally. Simply put, they need to eat food.

As I was washing the dishes, Silent Water stood next to me and watched me carefully, memorizing my movements. Looking at her serious expression, I suddenly feel very happy and suddenly feel like I have found a family member.

-----

“Well, this is your room.” I had tidied up a guest room near my bedroom and transformed it into Silent Water’s room.

Silent Water must have been really happy because she suddenly jumped on the bed and hugged the pillow.

I was about to ask her if she had “any problems” but I found out that she had already fell asleep.

Meh~~~ She should be tired. She ran out of the demon world with her mother to the human world and lost her father yesterday. She also lost her mother today but she did her best to remain calm. It was hard on her.

I poured a cup of tea and put it on her table. Since she is a water sprite, she must need replenishment.

I turned on the nightlight and gently closed the door. I planned to go downstairs to take a shower.

After my shower and watching TV for a while, it was already midnight.

“I still have to go to school tomorrow.” I turned off the TV and went upstairs to bed.

Just as I laid down on the bed, I already started to get sleepy. I fell asleep pretty soon after I started to get drowsy..

-----

“Boy...” A really rough voice echoed in my ears.

“Boy !!!” The voice came again.

I reluctantly opened my eyes and found myself surrounded by gray.

“Who is it?” I asked.

After I spoke, a group of white balls and a group of black balls lit up from the darkness.

Their dazzling bright light made me squint my eyes

When I opened my eyes again, two dragons appeared in front of me!

One was white, the other was black. Unlike in books, they do not have wings. They have two hands and two feet. They are dragons of the demon world. They are like the dragons in the Chinese New Year paintings, with bodies as long as snakes and long whiskers. They had four claws and they were muscular with many “abs”.

(TL: they look kind of like [this](#))

The original gray space split into a world of half black and half white.

“Boy, you talk very boldly.” The black dragon said.

“Well~~~ he is a person that had already died before.” The white dragon said while laughing.

“You are.. dragons?” Although I knew that this question was stupid, I could not help but ask it out loud.

“Yes, we are the famous...” The black dragon was in the midst of his speech but the white dragon interrupted him: “Hey! Yalide! Don’t be so conceited and don’t bother with all that tiring stuff okay? We have already died thousands of years ago, how have you still not changed at all.?”

“Ha? You say that I’m conceited and a bother? You bastard, Freed, do you have the right to talk about me? Don’t pretend that you are all high and mighty, you don’t think that I know that you...”

“Don’t talk bother talking about things of the past, or do you want to fight me, you asshole?”

“Who’s afraid of who?” The black dragon started to laugh: “I happen to want to talk about it, in fact you...”

*Bang* Without waiting for the black dragon to finish talking, the white dragon’s tail whipped his tail against the black dragon’s body. It probably hurt a lot because he used a massive amount of force.

“You bastard, I just know that you love to use sneak attacks. And you claim to be a child of the light.” The black dragon angrily roared as a black light whizzed at the white dragon’s body.

“This asshole...”

All of a sudden, the white and black light engaged in a fierce battle. That can't be good, ah, two dragons are actually fighting each other. A dragon's power was very great and even angels are unable to handle them. Even demons respect them out of fear and they even had their own exclusive property in the demon world.

But, the scene in front of me, how can I describe it, was really spectacular. In the collision, the white and black light was hard to distinguish. All of a sudden the light beams changed direction and aimed straight at me...

"Oh wow..." I sat up and I hear the sweet sound of birds singing out my window. Aside from the sound of my rapid breathing, it was quiet in my room.

"What a puzzling dream." I wipe the sweat off my forehead and got out of bed. I washed up, put on my uniform, and went downstairs. The smell of fried pork chops enter my nose...

In the kitchen, I see Silent Water in an apron looking like a young housewife. Seeing me, she smiled: "You're awake, the meal is almost ready, please wait a little while."

"Oh... okay." I replied blankly. Spirits are really scary, how do they learn so fast? How can it smell the exact same as the one I made yesterday? No, it smells better than the one I made yesterday.

I sit at the table and watch Silent Water busily at work. I did not know why but my heart suddenly feels warm, was this how a family feels like? It had only been one day and I already view Silent Water as a part my family. Did this feeling come up because I have no parents?

"It's done, try it." Silent Water took out a bowl of rice and placed it in front of me. She then served me fried pork chops and watercress, the two dishes I made yesterday. We ate all the cucumbers yesterday so she did not make any of that.

I used my chopsticks to pick up some watercress into my mouth and started to chew: "Delicious..." Silent Water really was too much, was this really from a someone who had just entered the world of cooking? I picked up a piece of fried pork chops. It tasted very good too.

"You are too good at this Silent Water, the stuff you made are truly delicious."

Just those words could not describe its spectacular taste but I am not good at using pretty words so I just said it as best as I can it normally.

“Not really.” Silent Water timidly lowered her head: “As long as you like it.”

“Hey, how did you make these Silent Water?”

“Me? To be honest, my family’s ability to mimic others is the best out of all the spirits and I am the worst out of my family.” She got depressed as she talked about her family.

“Ah... to be honest, Silent Water, there is no best or worst here. As long as you do you best at whatever you are doing, your heart will get through. To me, Silent Water is always the best.” I usually do not encourage people but I randomly blurted that out.

“Mhm~ thank you.” Silent Water said in a trembling quiet voice.

As I rub her head, she looked up at me with wet watery eyes.

I smiled: “Silent Water, as long as you are willing, this is your home until you find the master you belong to.” I don’t really know what to say so I just said what I was already thinking in my mind.

But when I thought about the day Silent Water finds her master and leaves me, my heart clogged up.

Every spirit is in search of their own master. This is the same reasoning behind the spirit familiar summoning that will take place at my school in two weeks. June 20th is one of the best days of the year to summon spirits to this world. On that day, the human world’s spiritual aura would be abundant so the number of spirits who find their masters will significantly increase.

After meeting one another, the summoner and spirit will form a contract. The spirit will become the summoner’s familiar and fight along side the summoner as his partner.

“Mhm.” Crystal clear tears stream down Silent Water’s face: “—... master.”

“What did you say?” Silent Water’s voice was very low at that time. I only heard the word master.

“Nothing, lets eat.” Silent Water suddenly regained her earlier spirit.

---

Although I did not hear what Silent Water had said before, I didn't really care about that. In the time that Silent Water had not found her master yet, she would live together with me. While living with me, I had to take care of her and treat her like my family.

After breakfast, I realized that Silent Water did not make me a bento. Well~~ that's fine. I can make it myself and also use this to teach Silent Water how to make new dishes.

On my way to school, my heart was bursting with emotion.

Because I'm going to school again, yo. I'm attending a school for spirit users, yo. Although magic is very dangerous, I could also study in battle combat. If I think about the past me, I was the ace of the boxing and kendo club in middle school. However, that is in the past. This world's Kendo Club was no longer a random hobby club that used wooden swords but instead one that teaches someone how to use spiritual power to cause fatal damage to demons with the sword. Ah~~ The more I think about it, the more I want to hurry up and be at school already to learn those skills.

Walking on the road, I see that there were not many students around me. There were only a few. "How strange, why are there so little people?" Are they all late?

As I stare at the familiar streets with strange new buildings, I arrived at the school pretty quickly.

"Pillar Nofu Academy, what a really foreign sounding name." I sigh as I looked at the big school sign. Speaking of school, this school was completely different than my original world's Northern Sea High School. Although Northern Sea High School was the largest high school in it's area, how can it possibly compare to this academy? This academy covers an area three times that of Northern Sea High School's and it looked like those schools for the rich on TV.

"As I predicted, this world is simply awesome." I sighed again.

At this time, a guard loudly shouted at me: "Hey kid, you're still not going in there? Class is starting in 5 minutes."

Startled, I hurriedly ran past the gate. So I was the one running late. I snoozed my alarm because I thought that I did not need to go to school that early.

I walked inside the classroom. Yo, it was an automatic door! I wasn't even two meters from the door and it opened. It did not even make the *ding dong*~~~ noises that automatic doors sound like on TV. It opened quietly without noise.

"Yo, that trash Lin Xiang is actually late?" As I came in Yamada Yukihiro exclaimed and the people around him bursted into laughter.

I really wanted to openly yell at him but the cool Takahashi spoke: Yamada, are you already tired of living?"

The classed stopped laughing. A bunch of girls cried out: "Yeah, that's our Takahashi, what a swell guy."

Yamada countered: "Hmph, who's afraid of who?"

As Takahashi stared down at him, Yamada shrank.

%>\_<% So cool. The Takahashi of this world is way too cool. The gentle one of my world was good but I love this cool Takahashi.

I walk to my seat. The Satsuki sitting next to me tilted her head: "You're late? Are you feel sick?"

"No, it's just... I got up late."

"Huh~~~ mhm~~ ? How rare." Satsuki nodded her head. It seemed that 'I' had never been late for class before. Even if 'I' had never been late before, there is always a first for everything.

"So, when are you going to help me create an opportunity?" Satsuki added.

"Hah?" I said in confusion.

"You didn't forget right? What I said to you Saturday night." Satsuki looked at my strangely. Don't tell me that people like 'me' have never forgotten what other people have said to me?

"Oh~~ my bad, I just woke up. My brain isn't awake yet." I look at this Satsuki as I compared her to the Satsuki in my original world. Aside from their hairstyles, I did not see any other differences. The only weird thing that I noticed was that

this Satsuki seemed to be prettier. Is this because of the aftereffects of the nerd me liking this Satsuki?

“Eh~~ em~~” I coughed two times. I spoke like a true master: “Okay. I will let you confess to Takahashi in four days, Friday. You have to personally tell Takahashi your feelings but you also have to get to know him within those days too. After Friday, if you have not confessed, I will tell him for you.”

“Mhm~ mhm~”

“You and Takahashi have been together for so long, do you know what kind of person he is?”

“Of course. He is handsome, powerful, and a perfect guy who is always self-motivated.”

“.....” So that’s how it was. Bookworm Lin Xiang, how could you ever compare to Takahashi? But don’t worry, you already knew that it was impossible for you so you quietly swore to yourself to protect her in secret. I will keep your promise and protect her in your place.

“What aren’t you talking anymore?”

“Ha~~mhm okay. I’ll tell you more about Takahashi. In this world he...”

“What do you mean in this world?” Satsuki said, interrupting me.

Startled, I quickly replied: “Yesterday, I was talking on the phone with my uncle. I talk in Chinese with my uncle and I accidentally spoke in Chinese earlier. I meant this time, not world.” (Japanese pronunciation of world and Chinese’s time is a bit similar)

“Ohh~~~” Satsuki nodded her head: “Continue.”

“This w-... time’s Takahashi at the moment has many admirers but I have never seen him date anyone. This is because he is solely focused on improving his skills right?” I watch Satsuki’s expression as I said that. I don’t want her to think that I’m carelessly saying that because that was what the nerd Lin Xiang summed up last night.

“Satsuki looked to the side and her face flushed pink: “I feel like today’s Lin Xiang feels very weird.”

Tch~~~ Was I found out? No no no, impossible, nobody can find out.

“I have always been like this. Who cares about that, let’s get back on topic.”

“Oh! Okay.”

“Anyway, he has always been trying to become stronger so this is probably the reason why he isn’t dating anyone. Hey. Hey! Are you listening?” What’s up with Satsuki? She keeps staring at my face. Has she figured it out?

“Ah? Ehm... I’m still listening.”

“But he is not a blockhead. He may fall in love with a girl one day. Right? Hello? Satsuki, are you even paying attention?” Shit, did this guy really figure it out? She keeps staring at me.

“What...what did you call me?” Satsuki said in surprise.

“Didn’t I say... classmate.. Satsuki. Oy, stop changing the subject.”

*Ring ring ring* The class bell rang.

I deliberately sighed: “Look at that. It’s your fault, it’s already time for class.”

“Then... then we can talk after class.” Satsuki didn’t see to hear me as she was lost in thought.

Phew~~~ so dangerous. I completely forgot that the nerdy Lin Xiang was timid and always polite towards others. He usually said “classmate” in front of their name to show his respect. Although I knew that my surroundings had changed, in front of Satsuki, I totally forgot that I was in a different world.

Our first class was math. I was looking forward to learning things that would increase my power but I never expected that it was a real math class with a math textbook. The content inside was relatively simple too. Since this world also teaches magic to it’s students, looks like the learning courses have been lowered in level to reduce the burden on the students. The courses here are so simple.

After the first class, I suddenly felt tired. Dammit, I slept at twelve last night but I woke up at 5:30 because of that strange dream. I’m so sleepy.

Satsuki seemed to want to continue our conversation about how she was going to confess to Takahashi but Takahashi came over to my seat, wanting to

talk to me too. She became timid and opened a book, pretending to be busy studying.

“Why didn’t you come yesterday?” Takahashi handsomely laughed as he spoke to me. His white teeth were like glistening like diamonds.

“Yesterday?” Speaking of that, the nerd Lin Xiang promised Takahashi that he would help him at work on Sunday. “Ah... That’s because I got sick yesterday.”

“Oh, so that’s what happened. Was that why you were late today?” Yes this is Takahashi, a gentleman. In this world, he was a perfect guy. He’s cool when he’s supposed to be cool and knows exactly when to be concerned for someone.

“Yeah, sorry about that.” This is good, this could also be my reason for being late this morning.

“Are you alright now?”

“I feel a lot better.” Takahashi glanced at Satsuki out of the corner of his eye. From his expression, it looks like he is fond of her?

We chatted for a while and then the class started again. During this ten minute talk during the break, I notice that Takahashi sometimes stares at Satsuki. Because of how he acted, I feel that he also likes Satsuki too. Looks like even without my help, the confession would be successful? But if I tell him, it would be no fun. It’s better for Satsuki to personally confess to him.

This next class was English. However, I was too tired and started to doze off.

“Student Lin Xiang, what’s wrong?” A pleasant sounding hypnotic voice entered my ears.

I raise my head and find the English teacher, Ijima Meiko, to my side, watching me.

“I... I’m fine, I only have a little cold... maybe?” Ah ! ! ! ! Damn, I accidentally asked a rhetorical question.

“Oh, so that’s how it was. Studying is important but it is also important to take care of your body.” Ijima Meiko softly said.

I felt a chill come from behind my back. All the guys in my class had an indescribable expression on their face. It was the same expression I saw on the

guys who were back in my original world when they see me together with Satsuki. Wasn't it an "I want to kill you" expression? How come I'm seeing it in this world too?

Speaking of Ijima Meiko, she was really amazing. She was only 20 years old this year and reached the level of Magus. She was one of the ten strongest youngest spirit users in all of history. She inherited her abilities from Ijima Michita, her grandfather and the headmaster of our academy.

Ijima Michita, a battle Elder. He gave up the honorable of being one of the world's guardians in order to become our spirit user-in-training school's headmaster. He had a profound motto: "How can one person protect the world? I rather train a group of future guardians."

This highly prestigious Ijima Michita was a noble battle Elder that overlooked Ijima Meiko's strength. With just her appearance, all the male students fell in love with her. She was named the "Male Killer" by the academy students.

She had a model's height of 1.75 meters, a slender waist with a full you-know-what. If you glance at her just once, she would already be unforgettable in your mind because of her enchanting face. If looks could kill, she would have killed all the male students and teachers in this academy.

Even the bookworm Lin Xiang liked her but he only liked her appearance and did not really love her with his heart. This was because she does not look down on the weak Lin Xiang like other teachers.

In my eyes, Ijima Meiko is indeed beautiful but it was because of her mature charm. I feel that after a few years, Satsuki would also grow up into becoming a "Male Killer" too.

I force my eyes open and actually sat through the entire class.

I lie on my desk. Satsuki poked me with her pen and then waved: "I'm tired, let's talk after the next lesson."

"Hey. Hey. Hey." Satsuki poked me with her pen a little harder. But I was already exhausted and have already flown off into the dream world.

"Hey, you slept through an entire class. Are you really sick? I swear you looked fine this morning." Satsuki said in a blaming tone of voice near my ear.

I raise my head and rubbed my eyes: “Oy, a cold is a cold. Besides wasn’t it only Physics. Now back on topic, where were we?”

“We were at Takahashi not being a blockhead so he could one day fall in love with someone else.” Satsuki said as she tutted at me with her small mouth: “Today’s Lin Xiang is acting really strangely.”

“Ah~~~ It’s because I caught a cold and makes me forgetful. That’s why I’m like this, you know that. I’m not being strange.” I smiled bitterly: “I already said to not change the subject earlier. Listen to me.”

“Hey, wait, why are you standing up?” I originally wanted to finish talking in one breath so I can temporarily ignore Satsuki afterwards. Lest I reveal my secret.

Then the entire class stood up and left their tables.

“What did you say? Let’s continue after this lesson. It’s time for simulated combat training.” After she finished talking, she left with two other girls in the class.

Simulated combat training ? ?

Cool ! It was finally time for the fighting course. I remember that the nerd Lin Xiang hated this lesson. It was because this course tests our combat skills. With his skills, he could not even win against the lowest ranked demon in this simulation. The students would always laugh at the Lin Xiang that was forced to run in circles because of a lesser demon.

Takahashi grabbed me on my shoulder: “Let’s go, you can’t skip it, there’s something fun to look forward to this time.”

“Fun? What kind of fun?”

“It will definitely be fun, hehe. If you, go you’ll know.” Takahashi said with a smile.

“Oh!” I’m looking forward to it.

————— Combat Simulation Training Room

The combat simulation training room. It was a room that covered an area of more than 200 square meters. It has advanced technology that could simulate a

demon's form and even clone a demon's ability. However, for the student's safety, the highest setting was only a low demon. All the simulated forms were either lesser demons or low demons.

The teacher in charge of this course was Yaozele-something? I didn't care what his name was. I just knew that the nerdy Lin Xiang who I thought would never think badly of others, hated him. If you weren't strong enough, this teacher would even refuse to look at you. He was a typical teacher who only cared for the strong.

He seems to be 30 this year? And probably not married? Heh~~ but with that kind of character, how could anyone like him.

He likes sports so we line up and then he did roll call.

After roll call, he began to call names of the first people to fight against the lesser demon simulations: "Takahashi Nobuhiko."

Was it zeyao or yaoze? Whatever. When the teacher called out Takahashi's name, all the girls in the class made a *Waaa~~ oohh~~* sound. He was truly worthy of being the number one spirit user in this class. He was already a lvl 2 Intermediate Magician in his first semester and he already had the capability to fight a low demon.

Takahashi had a handsome aura around him when he went on stage. He really was so cool. At this moment I wanted to shout really loudly saying: "That handsome guy is my good friend."

Of course, I wasn't that silly. If I said that out loud, I would be despised by all the girls in here and be killed under their glares... Wait a minute, what the heck? I felt like I became a different person. Why the hell would I said to say 'that handsome guy is my good friend' out loud? Gross.

Forget it, I don't want to think about it. I'll have a look at how Takahashi eliminates demons and maybe learn something from him.

"Are you ready?" The system said in a voice like it was the opening of a game. Then it started to countdown: "Three... two... one."

In front of Takahashi, a foggy thing appeared. At the same time, on Takahashi's head, a golden magic circle appeared. Silver blades flew out of the circle to stab

the demon.

“Takahashi-san is truly worthy of being called a genius. In just a few seconds, he brought out such a big magic circle of the gold magic.

This so-called gold magic is one out of the five basic magic properties a spirit user could specialize in. They are wind, fire, water, electricity, and gold kinds of magic.

Light magic. Aside from angels, no other species could use it. As for dark magic, it was exclusive to demons and a black mage.

Gold magic. It is a difficult to master magic that could materialize weapons. Only intermediate magicians and higher could cast that sort of spell.

“So handsome...” All the girls screamed as if it were a concert and the atmosphere kept rising.

That previous magic was really cool, was this the fun thing that Takahashi was talking about?

“Then, after Takahashi-san’s performance, we will request Satsuki-san to step on up....”

As soon as Satsuki went up on stage, the male students who were bored suddenly became vigorous. They shouted: “Satsuki, Satsuki, Satsuki.”

-----

Satsuki specialized in wind and fire magic. If you combine wind with fire, the wind will strengthen the fire and let it be more destructive.

After Satsuki went on stage, in less than 3 or 4 seconds, the lesser demon got K.O.’d.

This could help me learn somethings but I don’t really want to learn magic. I rather learn combat skills. Speaking of combat fighters, the rank 4 in the class, Yamada specialized in close quarter combat. I should learn from him.

The person who was rank 3 in the class was the class monitor. She specializes in poison and fog. It fits well with her personality and character.

I forgot to mention that in addition to the five basic magic properties, there

are other types of magic out there, such as poison magic, fog magic, wood magic, and so on..

Miss rank 3 killed the demon in less than a second. How terribly fierce... Now it is Yamada's turn. He held a sword and when the system was preparing for the next demon simulation, I saw flames erupt from his sword.

As soon as the system said start, the demon appeared. Yamada ran up to the demon. His movement contained no elegance but the me that learned Kendo could tell that every slash of his blade was accurate and deadly.

-----

The class had a total of 60 people. After 59 people went up for the battle simulation, I saw a number of fighting techniques. Now it is the turn of the lowest ranked person in the class, my turn. The previous 10 simulations left people bored out of their mind but when they see me get on stage, they became spirited again.

These bastards, they were probably looking forward to another one of 'my' embarrassing performances. But they won't get it. Since I had already beaten a superior demon even though I had no idea how that happened. Oh, it was the white flame. Would it appear again?

As I thought about it, I shook my fist but nothing happened.

'Hum~ if I think about it, how could that have happened. Maybe an angel was helping me out.'

I smiled to myself and stood on the designated location.

The mechanical voice of the system began again.

"3... 2... 1..."

This time, a fog-like substance appeared in front of me.

Once it appeared, it hit me...

Weird. What's going on? The other 59 people's simulation that I observed were completely different. Every time a demon appeared, it always tried to escape and let them fight with the simulation. How come when it was my turn the demon took the initiative to attack me? It's speed was pretty fast too.

I jump backwards and the demon's claw hit the place I was standing earlier and a deep rifted appeared.

'Ha? What's going on? Why was it's strength so powerful? If it was a direct hit, then I would really have died. Does this system hate me enough to pick a demon that would initiate a fight? Was this a special way it tormented weak people like me? Wasn't this AI a bit cruel and unusual?

Just when I was about to fight back, there was a *whoosh*, and a sword that radiated silver light stabbed the heart of the demon. The demon disappeared. The attacker was my good friend Takahashi.

"What the hell is going on?" Takahashi loudly yelled at the teacher.

"I... I don't know either." The teacher replied, panicking.

What happened? And why does Takahashi look nervous too?

"Do you call that a lesser demon? That was obviously a low demon, if Lin Xiang did not avoid that attack and got hit, what would we do?" Ah~~ I'm so moved. So Takahashi was worried about me.

No wonder, that demon's murderous intent was heavier than all the other simulated lesser demons. If it weren't for Takahashi's fast reflexes, I really would not know what could have happened.

"I'll immediately go check. It must be a system error." The teacher said as he trotted away to the control center.

That guy, although he was snobbish, he was probably already to take responsibility for a student injury.

"Long live Prince Takahashi-kun ~~" A girl suddenly cried

"Yay, yay."

"Whoa~~~ he's so hot~~ Takahashi-kun, you're so hot."

"Yeah, he's super hot, how can he be that hot?"

"I need to catch up, I will definitely become Takahashi-kun's woman!" Wow, that was a really bold statement.

Takahashi laughed and paid no mind to them. He patted me on the shoulder

and we walk together back to the classroom.

“I can’t believe that just happened.” Takahashi sighed.

“Yeah.” I nodded my head.

“But, how could you have dodged that? That demon’s speed was clearly very quick.”

“Mhm?” As he asked me that, he looked somewhat uncomfortable. He was probably wondering why my reaction speed became! “Ohh~~ just now? You know that I have a cold right? I was about to sneeze so I took two steps back because of that.”

“So that’s how it was.” Takahashi’s disbelief vanished and his eyes returned to his previous kind expression: “You were really lucky, but that’s a good thing.” Takahashi laughed, and his white teeth flashed every so often.

-----

Back in the classroom, because of what had happened before, the girls could not keep calm. They all ran up to Takahashi.

“Ne~ ne~, Takahashi-kun you’re soooo hot. Everytime I look at you, it makes me love you even more.”

“Don’t be in heat, Riko.”

“Yeah Yeah. Ne~ ne~ Takahashi-kun, if something like that happened to me, you have to save me.”

Takahashi was surrounded by 27 chattering girls and the male students in the class were all jealous out of their minds.

There are a total of 29 girls in our class. One of the girls that did not join was my timid friend — Satsuki. The other was that poisonous class monitor, Kamiki Kuji.

“What? Jealous?” I smiled at the Satsuki who was staring intently at Takahashi.

“Hmph~~~” Satsuki snorted as if in a bad mood.

When she pursed her mouth flat, I realized that she was legitly unhappy. Relax, Takahashi obviously likes you, I snickered to myself.

After another lesson, it was time for lunch.

“Ahh? You have a bento?” Satsuki said in surprise as she saw me take out a bento from my bag.

“Ahh.. yeah... I had free time this morning so I made it.” I open my bento.

“Whoa, it’s deep-fried meatballs!?” Satsuki’s eyes shone as she exclaimed loudly.

Even if it’s a different world, she still likes eating deep fried meat balls? How typical of Satsuki.

“Haa~~~ this, I knew that you liked to eat this. Here, for you.” Since I was used to making deep fried meatballs for the other world’s Satsuki, I unconsciously made some this morning.

After her delightful feelings of happiness, Satsuki suddenly thought: “How did you know that I liked deep-fried meat balls?”

“.....” Shit, I forgot. The nerd Lin Xiang always eats in the dining hall and did not know that she liked eating deep fried meat balls.

(TL: I suddenly realized that croquettes are deep fried meatballs.. found a cute looking [bento](#) too)

“Well... it’s because... when I first opened my bento, didn’t you say ‘whoa, there’s deep fried meatballs’? I figured that you must really like them.”

“Hmm~~ mm?” Satsuki said in a suspiciously strange tone of voice.

“Hey, stop thinking about the small stuff, you gonna eat that? If not, I’m going to eat them all.” I threatened.

“I do, I do...eh? These deep fried meat balls are so delicious, who made them? Isn’t this too delicious?” Satsuki said after she took a bite. Her eyes widened as she covered her mouth.

“Bought it off the streets.”

“Liar, I’ve eaten all the neighborhood’s fried meat balls and I’ve never eaten these delicious ones yet. It’s impossible that you made it, since you burned all your cooking when we’re in home ec.

Now that I think about it, that really happened before. Home economics is a class designed to teach people how to cook and will help people survive in the outside world. It's good to live with a full stomach. That nerd Lin Xiang though, he always finds a way to burn his pot inside out.

"Hmm? Xiang you brought your own bento today?" Takahashi came over.

Satsuki immediately bowed her head and busily ate her bento.

"Mhm, yeah, sorry, I can't go with you to the canteen..." I laughed, embarrassed.

"Is that so? No problem, I'll go eat alone." Takahashi glanced at Satsuki again and left, looking unhappy.

"Hey! That was a good opportunity! Why didn't you talk to him?"

"Ahh~~ mmh~~ I got nervous." Satsuki grumbled. Looks like she regretted her lack of courage that made her unable to talk to Takahashi.

Seeing her like this, I couldn't help laughing. Aside from appearances, even the personality was completely different. The Satsuki from my previous world was very bold.

I laughed out loud: "Alright, I'll bring you to the place Takahashi works at this afternoon, after school. You better not miss your chance again."

"Mmm... I'll definitely try my best."

—————  
"I'm sooo full." Satsuki said as she closed her empty bento.

I saw a grain of rice on her lips and stretched out my hand to take it off. I smiled: "Remember to wipe your mouth after you finish eating."

"I... I... I... could have... done that myself." Satsuki blushed and ran out of the classroom. Probably going to the bathroom?

After I closed my bento cover, Yamada came back into the classroom with his two minions while biting into a toothpick. Seeing that Takahashi wasn't around, he swaggered over in my direction: "Yo, trash, help yo daddy here buy a bottle of juice."

"I want one too." Yamada's two followers said at the same time.

I stood up.

Yamada thought that I was going to help him, as if I was his dog or something, and added: "Then three bottles of the same kind."

I held out my hand out and casually started to speak: "Give me me money and I'll consider if I want to help you buy them."

Yamada looked very surprised by my actions: "What did you just say? I heard you wrong, right?" He raised his fist and it came towards me.

*Pah* I caught Yamada's heavy fists. Then I kicked him in the stomach and he slumped onto the floor. The chattering of my classmates were so loud that no one noticed that Yamada had been defeated by me.

Yamada angrily stood up as his fists flew towards me again.

This time, I didn't give him an opportunity to even touch me. Before his fists even reached me, I kicked him and sent him flying 3-4 meters backwards. As soon as I saw his disheveled appearance, I felt happy, carefree, because ever since I saw him this morning I was reminded of how he bullied the nerd Lin Xiang. It was not a pleasurable feeling at all.

All the students in the class turned in our direction. With great care, I ran over to where he fell and said spoke in a fearful tone of voice: "Uh, violence is bad, you see, it even made you slip and fall over."

I lowered my voice down to a volume that only Yamada could hear: "I gave you an exit out but you did not take it, so now you're losing face. What? If you want to fight, come at me. Oh, you should also bring your seven best friends." I was referring to the seven friends of his that I beat to a pulp in the other world.

But in this world, Yamada and those bully friends of his always blackmail the me of this world.

The two followers had seen the easy to bully me unexpectedly beat Yamada with such an unexpected power. When they saw what had happened, they became completely stupid.

Yamada swore loudly: "You two assholes, why aren't you coming to help me up?" They finally reacted and went over to give Yamada a lift.

After Yamada was helped up, although he was less arrogant, he growled: “Lin Xiang! Just you wait.” Then he went to the infirmary with his two attendants.

By now, most of the people in the class had returned. They did not know what I had done earlier and asked: “What happened?”

Fortunately, Takahashi and Satsuki had not arrived yet. I don’t want them to see me like this.

I sat back in my own seat, turned my head facing the window, and watched the scenery outside. I ignored the whispers of my classmates in the classroom.

A while later, Satsuki returned. Her face felt like it was more delicate and smoother than before so I guess she went to wash her face. She asked me: “When I left earlier, wasn’t it really noisy before? How come it’s so quiet now? What happened?”

“I dunno, oh, it was probably because Yamada fell down.” I said.

“Ohh~~ so that’s what happened.”

————— After school

After school, Takahashi ran to his workplace.

Originally, I wanted to call him but did not call him in the end. So now it became a situation of going home together with Satsuki, which surprised a lot of the boys from school.

“The campus Madonna is unexpectedly leaving together with that piece of crap? Am I dreaming?”

They rubbed their eyes and realized that they were not dreaming. Then they started cursing me.

I was already used to it in the other world so I didn’t really care. Satsuki seemed to not be used to the stares of the male students but she did not utter a single sound.

“Hey~ you alright? Want to walk further apart?”

“No, it’s fine, I’ll use this... to practice my courage.”

I sighed and did not say anything else. As we walked along the long path away

from the academy in silence, we arrived downtown.

Tired, Satsuki asked me: “Hey Lin Xiang, are we there yet?”

“We’re almost there. You see that intersection in front of us? We just need to walk about 200 meters past that and we’ll be there.”

“Ha? That far?”

“It’s not far, it’s short. As long as you think about Takahashi, you won’t get tired.” The pedestrians around us kept coming and going. Suddenly, a duo of mother and daughter caught my eye.

The little girl was holding her mother’s hand in one hand, and a balloon in the other. She was bouncing up and down energetically.

The mother released the girl’s hand to bend down and picked up a coin she dropped.

At the same time, the balloon flew away from the girl and she ran away chasing it... but in front of her was a heavily trafficked road.

“...ne, Lin Xiang, are you listening to me...” Before Satsuki even finished her sentence, I gave her my bag and told her to: “Hold it.”

As I ran towards the girl, at that moment, the truck from the other side of the street appeared. In this situation, I could have waited for the girl to run out of the street, or even wait for the truck to brake, but that would be too late

Damn, why is it like this again? Do I have to die one more time?

No, I won’t die. Last time, I helped a kid riding a tricycle by kicking it out of the car’s range. This time, it was only a lone girl and there is nothing in my way. I can do it.

Okay, I caught up with the girl. The little girl was only 2 meters away from me and the truck finally began to brake after discovering the little girl. I took the little girl in my arms and barely rolled out of the truck’s way.

I quickly stood up, avoiding the traffic on the other side of the street as I held the little girl in my arms and casually walked back on the road.

The little girl’s tiny beady eyes stared intently at me. It seems as if she didn’t

know what had happened.

That's good, this means that this accident will not leave a shadow in her heart.

Next to the road, the little girl's mom was scared out of her wits. She dropped her wallet and everything else she was holding to run at us.

I wasn't sure if anything happened to the little girl so I carefully checked for injuries.

The little girl saw her mom crying so she started to cry as well. She dropped into her mother's arms.

The little girl's mother continuously said thanks to me as the truck driver pulled over, parking at the roadside. He got off and asked me if I needed to go to the hospital. I swiftly rejected him.

I was only a little dizzy but I didn't get hit. Did that mean I had to go to the hospital? I used to always get hit on the head with a stick in fights. If I went to the hospital every time I got a little injury, wouldn't I have been in there at least a dozen or more times already?

After declining the mother's invitation to dinner, I walked over to Satsuki's side: "Sorry about that, they're freaking out too much."

Satsuki just continued to stare at me with an indescribable expression on her face. I ask: "What's wrong?"

She woke up from her trance: "Hmm? Hmm, yeah." She looked surprised as she asked me: "You... when did you.. become so fast?"

"I was always like this." I laughed.

Satsuki lowered her head: "Really... I had always felt like I never completely understood Lin Xiang. We've been classmates for 3 years, and we're friends too." What was she talking about this time? She sounded like she was accusing me of something.

However, it was true that you do not really know me. We have only met for one day. I rub her head like usual: "Alright, let's go, to Takahashi's store."

Satsuki flushed beet red. She swatted my hand away: "Don't touch my head~~ Today's Lin Xiang is really weird, completely from the past."

After hearing her say that, all the hairs in my body rose and I felt like I sweated a storm.

Oh no, the nerdy Lin Xiang would never touch Satsuki like that. I could bluff my way through that rescue but I have no explanation for touching her head. Don't tell me that I have to tell her that I "came from another world."

If I say that, wouldn't they send me to a mental hospital?

I bitterly smiled, "I'm still myself. Okay, let's stop talking about this, let's go to where Takahashi is."

"This... today... I don't want to go anymore." Satsuki said in a low voice.

"How come you don't want to go anymore?" I'm confused, how come Satsuki suddenly said that she doesn't want to go anymore?

"I don't want to go, I want... to go home."

Although I don't know what happened to her, but since she didn't want to go anymore, then we won't go. I took both bags from her hands: "Then I'll walk you back."

Now that I think about it, what should I eat today? Lost in thought, I considered this problem.

As soon as I took Satsuki's bags, she looked as if I scared her or something. Wanting to get her bag back, she fell into my arms.

"What're you doing~~ aren't I just helping you hold your bag." I helplessly said.

She took two steps back, grabbed her own bag and bent her head, not even daring to look at me. She clutched her bag to her chest as she turned: "As expected, today's Lin Xiang is weird, oh, even I have become weird."

After she finished speaking, she ran away.

"Hey!" I shouted at her retreating back.

What happened to that guy? You know, the you over there always made me help you every time you went home. The you over there?

Darn, I acted the same way I act to the other world's Satsuki, to this world's Satsuki. I don't know why I always forget about the fact that I traveled through

time and space when I'm in front of her.

Her face was so red. She was probably mad at me? She probably hates me now?

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 1 Chapter 5 – Silent Water, Satsuki's Text and a Fight**

"I'm back." I opened the door and took off my shoes. Silent Water came out to greet me...

"Welcome back." Silent Water replied

"En, I'm ba..." I raised my head and an unprecedented visual impact stung my eyes.

Today's Silent Water was so pretty that I almost didn't recognize her. How could I describe it? It was obviously only just a change of clothes.

The Silent Water in front of me was wearing the clothes I bought her yesterday — a blue dress that fit her appropriately. She pulled off the look very well and it brought out the sea-like color of her dark blue hair.

"Uhhh..." Silent Water asked shyly as her face flushed red: "Is there something on my face?"

I suddenly realized that I was being rude so I scratched my head, embarrassed. Looking at the floor I told her what I had been thinking: "Haha, how do I say this, Silent Water looked too pretty today so I got careless..."

*Bang~* I raised my head to discover that Silent Water had disappeared. White mist was drifting out from the washroom door...

Oh~ yeah. I spoke too soon. I obviously was fully aware that Silent Water was an especially shy girl.

Hrm? This feeling... it's as if the house had been renovated... as I look at the spotless floor and the sparkling walls, I felt as if I had entered the wrong house. If Silent Water wasn't here, I really would have believed that.

I crouched down and wiped the floor with my fingers. To my surprise, there

was not even a speck of dust. Wasn't this too exaggerated? Could it be that Silent Water used water magic to clean the house?

I carried my bag into the kitchen and began to wash the vegetables that I plan to eat today.

After I finished washing, Silent Water finally came out but she did not dare to enter the kitchen. She sneakily looked at me as if she was a misbehaving child. It was extremely adorable.

"Hehe, come over, no need to be so shy, okay?" I said with a laugh.

Silent Water then slowly came over, one small step at a time.

—————

"Silent Water, what did you do today? I was interested in how Silent Water passed the time today. Being alone all day ought to be boring, right?"

"I watched TV, and then ate food, and then did the laundry, and then..." Silent Water put her index finger on her chin, recalling her activities for the day.

"Really now, Silent Water is really great. Take a look around the house, you made it look as if it were brand new." I point everywhere: "Thank you, Silent Water."

"No~ it's something I ought to do." Silent Water said as she lowered her head, extremely embarrassed.

"You're home alone...will you be bored?" I asked.

"N-no... I won't. Aren't you already home now?"

I heard the loneliness in her response. Truthfully speaking, I could understand Silent Water's feelings. Wasn't I also all alone before?

If Silent Water wasn't a spirit, I would have brought her to school already. To let her the experience what it's like to live like a human girl.

I stretched my hand over to rub her head. At the same time, I wondered if there were other spirits who had the appearance of a human, like Silent Water: "Hey, Silent Water, there should be other spirits like you, right?"

"There are. My mother told me that besides us water spirits, there are wind,

fire, and electric humanoid spirits.”

“Humanoid spirits?”

“Right, our composition is exactly like that of humans, except that we are spirits. My mom said that we could have possibly started out as humans, but by migrating to go live in the Demon World, our spiritual energy and soul experienced a transformation, converting us into spirits.”

“So it was like that.” I nodded.

“And...? Master?”

“Hm?” Did Silent Water have a problem? Wait, wait. Did she just call me master?

But if I think carefully about it, I feel like this wasn't that big of a surprise. I don't believe that Silent Water would deem me to be her master. She only addresses me like that because I am the master of this house, on top of the fact that she's extremely courteous. Calling me by my name would be impolite, therefore this would be the cause of her calling me master, right?

“What's wrong?” I saw that Silent Water still kept her head lowered.

“Your hand...does it...possess magic? This feeling... being touched by you, my body numbingly gets filled with power.” Silent Water quietly said.

At this moment I realized that my hand had been caressing Silent Water's head nonstop. I promptly withdrew my hand and said: “Sorry, sorry, if you don't like it then it's fine.”

*Sigh*~ I lost control of myself. Although I already consider Silent Water as family, it would seem that Silent Water doesn't consider me to be part of her family. I felt like she was a good person so I treated her like she was someone I am familiar with. When will she change and get used to me?

Since I didn't really have much of a family, I considered Takahashi as a brother and Satsuki as my little sister.

“No~~~ It..it's...n-not...t-that I don't...like it...it would be better to say, I really like it...” Silent Water stammered.

Is she comforting me? Ha~ She's a really considerate girl.

“Alright, let’s eat.” I changed the conversation...

So there’s wind, fire, and electric type humanoid spirits, eh? Since Silent Water already suffered an attack, the others should also have been attacked, right?

-----

After we finished eating, Silent Water told me that she wanted to wash the dishes. I let her wash the dishes as I stood by her side. As I watched her skilled technique, I discovered that the chopsticks appeared to look brand new after being washed

I asked her why and she told me it was the water’s cleansing effect.

After I took a bath, I watched some program called “Spirit Analysis” with Silent Water. It had already gotten this late.

After I washed my face and brushed my teeth, I laid my weary body on the bed. I turned on my cell phone to look at the time and discovered that I had a text message. It was sent by Satsuki, at 5:30? That was when I was still cooking.

–‘This afternoon I actually wasn’t mad at you, I only reacted like that because you scared me a little. Remember, I’m not actually mad at you.’

What is she talking about? The matter from this afternoon? I’m still under the impression that I made her angry.

I replied: ‘Understood, beloved Risa-chan.’ Closed my cell phone and prepared to sleep.

Not even ten seconds passed and my cell phone rang.

–‘You...What are you saying...Baka, it’s true that I’m not mad at you, but...I never said...I liked you though.’

“Huh?” As I read her reply, I couldn’t make heads or tails of it. When did I say she liked me?

‘Silly, there’s no way that I’d think you like me, I already know you like Takahashi. Takahashi is handsome and strong. If you didn’t like him, I’d think you weren’t a girl, eh.’

–‘Actually...you aren’t that bad, it’s just that Takahashi is too outstanding

that's all.'

'Understood, go to sleep.' I replied and closed my eyes.

*Ringringring~::~Ringringring~* I had just fallen asleep when my cell phone's ringtone woke me up.

I opened my eyes in a daze. I've only slept for five minutes?

Incoming caller is Satsuki?

What's up with this chick?

I pressed the answer button and heard the sound of Satsuki's urgent voice coming from the phone.

"Hey, Lin Xiang? You okay? Why'd you take so long to answer my call?"

"Huh?" My half-asleep self couldn't hear clearly.

"Why didn't you reply to my text? I already told you not to be angry." I couldn't understand Satsuki's confusing words. Why would I need to be angry?

"I'm not angry." I tiredly replied.

"Even if you say you aren't, I hear your voice and know you are~::sigh~::" The Satsuki on the phone I seemed to be troubled.

"In any case, Lin Xiang, you really aren't bad, you are my only male friend...not only that...you...you're even my best girl friend. I apologize, I shouldn't have compared you to Takahashi-kun."

"What are you saying?" The more I listened, the more confused I am: "Do you know what time it is? It's already 11, I'm very tired today. I want to sleep, beloved Risa-chan."

"Ba...baka." Satsuki said with an flabberghasted voice and then hung up right away.

Truly incomprehensible. Honestly, what's going on with her?

No matter, I'll sleep first. At this moment, I saw that my cell phone displayed ten unread text messages, all from Satsuki. In a matter of five minutes, she already sent ten messages? Wasn't that an average of 30 seconds per message? Seriously, what is she doing?

While in a stupor, I opened the inbox and took a look. In the first part, she's telling me not to be angry. The middle portion asked me how I am and the final portion was about my good points. Yet, she couldn't list any good points and only wrote that the croquette I gave her today was good.

After I looked at it, I shook my head and anxiously said: "This kid. In the future, I hope that she won't get abducted by someone just because of a croquette."

As I thought about it, another text message came and the sender was Satsuki once again.

–'Baka, good night.'

I looked at my originally empty inbox that now had a bunch of text messages from Satsuki and wryly smiled: "If you're still alive, I think you would probably die from happiness, eh."

The "you" that I mentioned naturally was referring to the nerdy Lin Xiang. That fellow, just a phone call from Satsuki asking a single question, was able to make him happy for an entire day. That super pure person and Satsuki's phone calls only ever talked about school-related topics, apart from that, they absolutely never chatted idly nor did they ever mutually send text messages to each other.

-----

"Boy..." A strong and solid voice rang by my ear once again.

I opened my eyes and saw two dragons floating before my eyes, one black and one white, arrogantly looking at me in a dignified manner.

"Freed, you must not look for a fight with me like yesterday, today, I must explain to him our current situation." The black dragon said.

*Hmph*~~ The white dragon snorted.

*Coughcough*~ The black dragon forced a cough. I felt that if his appearance wasn't that of a dragon, he would have a bit of a semblance to the people who tell stories under bridges.

"Listen well, boy, we are in fact" Just as the black dragon had begun to speak, the white dragon cut him short.

"Go to hell, you're trying to start your bullshit introduction again, right? Can't

you leave that out? Don't you know how much time it wastes?"

After being interrupted by the white dragon, the black dragon angrily said: "HEY!!! Freed, We've already been dead for more than a thousand years, what's the difference if I talked a bit more? Huh? It's just one sentence: We are precisely the shockingly unrivaled, incomparably handsome, favored mounts of God from the legends: The progenitors of dragons, the dragon gods."

"That's great. Now, are you going to explain or am I going to explain?" The white dragon said, still angry.

"Naturally, I will." The black dragon said, matter-of-factly.

Then, he coughed once again: "Listen very well, boy, in fact, we are"

"Go to hell, I've clearly become too old, I actually believed you?" The tail of the white dragon swung and struck the black dragon's face.

After being hit, the black dragon immediately roared: "You want a f\*cking fight?" The black dragon actually spoke some Chinese. I don't know how long it's been since I've heard someone use Chinese to swear. I felt a strong sense of nostalgia.

"Absolutely. A bug like you that's trying to pass off as a dragon needs a solid beating." The white dragon roared. Their roars caused the space around me to shake violently.

What happened after that was obvious without a need for an explanation. Their fight, the contest between light and dark, was precisely just like yesterday, neck and neck.

Nonetheless, if there is light, there will naturally be shadow — that is the dark. The existence of darkness displays the brightness of the light. It's precisely in this way that the existence of the opposite party was the reason for their own existence; mutual restraint, mutual control...

"Damn... had that weird dream again." I sat up and looked at my cell phone. It was already 6. I washed my face, changed into my school uniform and felt completely awake.

After I went downstairs to eat Silent Water's delicious breakfast, I headed off

to school.

As I went out, Silent Water told me to “be careful on the road.” That made my heart feel warm and tingly.

Was this the feeling of having a family?

Due to my habit of snoozing the alarm, today I’m going to be late to class again.

Today, Yamada didn’t speak to me and only looked at me as if he was angry I didn’t pay attention to him and just sat in my seat.

Once Satsuki saw me, she immediately lowered her head. I’m not sure whether or not she had make-up on, but she seemed to have put on some pink blush today.

“Yo~ Good morning.” I took my bag and put it into the drawer.

“En~~~ Good morning.” Satsuki replied in a soft voice.

Since I didn’t have anything else to say, I no longer spoke and just looked out the window.

“Ne.... You weren’t mad last night, right?” Satsuki timidly asked.

“Mad? Why?” I turned my head and Satsuki’s face that was originally facing me immediately lowered.

“Because...because I suddenly...hung up on you...” Satsuki’s two delicate index fingers kept twirling round and around.

“No way.” I said with a laugh.

Suddenly, Satsuki lifted her head to look at me and then angrily said: “That’s right, why would I need to apologize to you? Clearly, last night you... unexpectedly addressed me as...” Speaking up to that point, she once again lowered her head. The face that originally already recovered its fair complexion was red once again.

“Huh?” I recall the events from yesterday and then suddenly realized: “Oooh~~~ Sorry. I had already fallen asleep. Your call woke me up in a daze.”

“So that’s the case.” Satsuki sneakily glanced at me. At this time the bell that

indicated the start of class rang.

First period is Math, a class the homeroom teacher was in charge of. He saw me sleeping and called me up to solve a 'super hard problem'. I stood up to take a look and was immediately stunned. Wasn't this a problem that you do in your 3rd year of middle school? I remember this kind of problem, I did them until I wanted to puke. Piece of cake.

Homeroom teacher saw my stunned expression and laughingly said: "Lin Xiang, you can't? If you can't then I'll punish you by making you copy this book thirty times."

As Satsuki glanced at me worriedly, Yamada then said: "I can't believe it, there's actually a problem this nerd can't solve? Haha, hilarious."

Homeroom teacher looked at Yamada and asked: "Are you saying you can do it?"

Yamada didn't answer.

"So? Lin Xiang, are you able to do it?" Homeroom teacher beamed at me as he constantly slapped the blackboard.

I walked over, picked the chalk and I quickly wrote the answer without even looking at the topic. It was a simple and straightforward process.

"How.... could this be? That's the important topic I prepared for today's class..." The homeroom teacher turned to stare at me suspiciously as I turned to go back to my seat and shouted: "Stop, who said you could leave? Do another one." He said and then wrote another problem of that type. It was just a bit harder than the one already on the board.

But math was just a superficial subject and not to mention, this topic was something I was something I was already familiar with. After he finished writing, I barely looked at it and once again quickly wrote out the answer. Then, I faced him and asked: "I can go back now, right?"

Perhaps it was because I said that rather coldly because he didn't answer and only gave me a hard look. He no longer spoke.

As I walked off the platform, I realized I didn't return the chalk that was still in

my hand. Not wanting to look at his face again, I casually tossed the chalk backwards and it actually landed in the chalk box. That was pretty lucky.

Not sure if it's because I just went up to solve the problem, but the class became very quiet since the students had all stopped talking. I laid down on my desk and only heard the unpleasant voice of the homeroom teacher lecturing about the topic. I ignored him and fell asleep.

— After class

Satsuki said to me: "I feel like you've changed."

"Really? It's probably because the weather had recently gotten hotter and drier. As a result, my temper has become more and more irritable."

"What are you talking about?" Satsuki gently hit me with her delicate hands: "Be honest, without paying attention in class you could still solve the hard problem. Do you have some technique?"

"Technique? Not really? You'll naturally be able to do them if you do them a lot."

"Is that the truth? We've never encountered these type of problems before."

"Eh...you know, I get bored at home so I just did some exercise problems. I didn't think that he would happen to discuss that topic today."

"Oh...So, teach me how to do this problem on the page." Satsuki said while shifting her book over.

"This question, compared to the two I just did, is a bit more difficult. You can solve the two I did earlier?"

"Originally when the teacher wrote out the problem, I felt a bit unsure. But, after seeing you write the answer, I realized that they're actually simple." Satsuki's face started blushing again.

"Hey you, you think just because they're simple that you don't have to them? You have to properly understand this topic and then do it yourself once. That way, you won't any issues with these types of problems in the future." I patted her head and said.

"Okay~~~" Satsuki lowered her head. Surprisingly, she didn't tell me to stop

touching her.

“Xiang~” A charming male voice called my name.

It turned out to have come from Takahashi? No wonder.

“You might have been even cooler than me just now.” Takahashi said to me laughingly after taking a glance at the blushing Satsuki who had her head lowered.

I’m not sure why, but as I faced Takahashi, I suddenly sensed a strange hostility from him.

Was that an illusion?

“Not really, it’s just that I was asleep, but then suddenly got woken up. I felt dizzy, so I wasn’t in a good mood.” I replied in that manner.

“Really? You’re really impressive. Falling asleep and still being able to solve those hard problems.” Takahashi glanced at me while also taking a look at Satsuki who was following my instructions and doing an exercise problem similar to the one I did.

“I was just at home bored and casually did it. Coincidentally, it showed up today. That’s all.”

“So it’s like that. I’m a bit unsure about how to do them, so do you have time right now? During the next class break, you need to properly teach me.” Takahashi’s coming here? This is a good opportunity.

“Sure, I’ll definitely teach you.” I happily replied.

.....

After second period ended, Takahashi actually came and brought along his notebook. I tap Satsuki’s lowered head but she remained motionless. Fine, this girl’s shyness wasn’t something that could be fixed all at once.

After a few simple explanations from me, the clever Takahashi in that short time understood it all. As expected. I don’t even know how many times I had to do them over and over again to understand these problems.

Then, the Takahashi who liked Satsuki finally went into action. He started to

speak to Satsuki.

They've spoken before, but they don't say much.

"Satsuki-san, can you do them?" Takahashi said, soft and gently.

"En." To my surprise, she nodded... I almost fainted. Aren't you supposed to say that you don't and let Takahashi teach you?

"I see, Satsuki-san sure is smart. In that case, Xiang~ I'll be going." As Takahashi said that, he took his notebook and left.

"Hey! What are you doing? Weren't you supposed to say you that you don't undetsand and let him teach you?" I patted her head.

"I'm shy~~~" Satsuki laid on her desk and secretly regretted it...

————— Lunch break

"Wa~~~Croquette?" Satsuki said shrilly and stood up once she saw me open my bento.

"Want some? I said with a laugh.

"Want to eat, want to eat." Satsuki looked like a puppy when she nodded her head, immediately took out her lunchbox and opened it.

"Here, all for you." I passed all the croquettes to her and her eyes lit up, never straying away from the croquettes the entire time.

"Delicious... they're too delicious. Lin Xiang, tell me which store made these."

"I already told you, I made them."

"I don't believe it. Hmph~~ If you don't want tell me, then it's fine." Satsuki stopped paying attention to me and ate her croquettes.

At this time, I saw Takahashi walk out the classroom. I originally wanted to call out to him, but he seemed to be a little mad, so in the end I didn't.

The action of me giving my croquettes to Satsuki was seen by Yamada, who stayed in class to eat his bread today. He was in an extremely bad mood and threw his half-eaten bread out as he fiercely looked at me.

After looking at each other momentarily, I stopped looking at him. If I looked at

his ugly face any longer, I was afraid I wouldn't be able to hold it in and would probably beat him up.

Speaking about that, didn't he tell me to wait for him? Yesterday he didn't even go get his seven friends, what happened?

.....

"Didn't I tell you already, you have to wipe your mouth after you finish eating." I saw that Satsuki's chin had a grain of white rice sticking onto it, so I stretched my hand out and took it off.

"I forgot... I forgot... seriously ... there's no need to touch me so suddenly..." Satsuki, with a red face like yesterdays, ran out of the classroom.

I chuckled a bit and helped put away her lunchbox. Then I poured a cup of water and placed it on her desk.

Three minutes later, Satsuki returned. It seemed like she had washed her face; her pink face was moist. She sat down, saw a cup of tea on her desk, then glanced at me until she finally drank it all.

————— After school

"Why do you always sleep in class now?" Satsuki said to me.

"Too tired." I replied.

"Fine, today, I need to go buy a notebook. Will you come with me?" Satsuki without being too excessive, gave me a beautiful look at her profile.

"The beautiful Risa... Satsuki-san is beckoning me, of course I'll go." The moment I said "beautiful Risa", I saw that Satsuki's face had started to turned red so I fixed my speech at once.

*Hmph*~~~ Satsuki snorted gently and her face still turned red.

"It's to talk about Takahashi, right?"

"En." Satsuki looked at my face as she answered.

"Right now, one day has already passed so there are still three days left. You still haven't even said a word to Takahashi... Oi, one more thing, you only have three days left. You need to seize a good opportunity. It will only mean

something if you personally confess, understand?”

“En.”

Satsuki and I left through the school’s back entrance and head towards the direction of the bookstore. The road we passed through was a rather remote and desolate place.

At that moment, I saw Yamada and his seven friends.

“Why’d you stop talking?” Satsuki asked.

“Satsuki, it won’t be a problem for you to go back a bit late, right?”

“What... do you want to... do to me?” Satsuki asked as she used her backpack to block her chest, and both her face and ears turned red.

I didn’t reply, and only gave her my backpack: “Help me hold it.” And then I walked over.

“You actually came!” Fearlessly, I looked at the wooden wand in Yamada’s hands: “Why here?”

I was very confused; based on Yamada’s nature, he should’ve fought with me in front of the school entrance, so that he could make the other students be afraid of him.

“You’re asking me why I chose this place, right?” Yamada replied, full of anger. Then, he opened his hands: “While you can still talk, I’ll tell you why. Right now, I need to beat you until you’re crippled, so that you’ll understand. No one dares to oppose the Yamada!”

“Lin Xiang~~~” Satsuki ran up: “What happened? What does Yamada-kun want to do?”

“You still remember how I told you yesterday that Yamada tripped and fell? I was the one who tripped him.” I said as I laughed.

“What? You...” Satsuki was extremely shocked. Then she said to me: “Lin Xiang, that’s not good. Why don’t we apologize to them? So they can forgive you.” Satsuki worriedly looked at me..

“Apologize? It’s possible, Satsuki-chan. You tell him to come over here to kneel

down and apologize right now, and you can play with us afterwards... I'll consider letting him off then" Yamada laughed with extreme lewdness: "Look guys, I wasn't lying, right? I told you she was extremely beautiful, right?"

"Truly beautiful..." The seven boy swallowed their saliva. The scared Satsuki hid behind me.

"Lin Xiang~~~ What do we do now? I'll go find people to help us." Satsuki said as she planned to run somewhere with more people.

Then, one of the boys used magic. A single glass-like see-through shroud surrounded us. I knew that this was called Isolation Shroud, this type of shroud can isolate the inside from any attack coming from outside of the shroud. Unless assaulted by a powerful magic attack, it would not break.

The chubby boy that released the shroud said: "I can't let you leave, miss~~~"

Oh right, I forgot. They use magic, dammit. I underestimated them. If they didn't have magic, would I even be afraid of these morons?

"Release Satsuki." Dammit, I have to give up my sure-win plan. As much as possible, I need Satsuki to leave this area.

"Why should I need to listen to the words of a future cripple?" Another boy asked.

"Didn't you guys want to beat me until I'm crippled? Satsuki is at eighth rank in our entire grade, a level 5 Junior Magician. With her here, can you really beat me and come out unharmed?"

"Lin Xiang~~ What exactly are you trying to do?" Satsuki heavily hit me

I didn't answer Satsuki, but instead spoke to Yamada: "Yamada, you know how strong Satsuki is."

Yamada thought about it and then said to the boy who released the shroud: "Sekisawa-nii, he's right, that girl shouldn't be provoked. Let her go."

"What do we do if we let her run away?"

"Letting her run away isn't a big deal. I have money..." Yamada and the shroud releasing boy looked at one another and obscenely laughed together. The shroud releasing boy created a hole in the shroud: "Brat. I'm warning you, don't you

dare leave.”

“Satsuki, go out now.” I said to Satsuki.

“What are you talking about? Lin Xiang? Are you crazy?” Satsuki looked at me with concern, with no intention of leaving.

“As soon as you get out, run away at once.”

“Not leaving, not leaving. I’m not leaving.”

“Listen to me, go out, okay?” I rubbed Satsuki’s head.

“Wh.. why?” Satsuki’s gem-like sparkling tears flowed out.

“Because I need to protect you. I don’t want to let you to get hurt.” After saying that, I pushed the dumbstruck Satsuki out and then the shroud releasing boy quickly sealed the shroud.

Satsuki threw down her backpack and started beating the Isolation Shroud: “Lin Xiang, hurry up and come out, you could actually die.”

I didn’t answer Satsuki and instead focused my attention on the figures of Yamada and the others.

Truthfully speaking, I felt breathed in a sigh of relief after seeing Satsuki go out. These blind idiots should know that students like us, who knew how to use magic, needed their wands to cast spells. Since a magic wand was typically put in the school’s locker, who would actually bring it home with them?

“You have quite a bit of courage, brat.” At that time, two boys came out: “You guys stay back, let us go and beat him crippled first.”

“Ichikun-nii, Ichimin-nii, no need, everyone go together. I didn’t realize this before but this guy can actually fight.” Yamada worriedly advised.

“You’re worried that we’ll lose?” The one called Ichikun glared at Yamada ruthlessly.

“No, no, no, you two brothers are undefeatable if you guys fight together.” Yamada’s concerned face was already gone.

Another person also said: “Ahhh, I came here for no reason. You guys hurry up and end this so I can eat dinner early. Grand daddy here wants to go pick up

some girls.”

There was no one in the area, just the sound of Satsuki’s crying echoed in the remote alley.

These two guys in front of me seemed to have underestimated me, so it seemed like they don’t plan on using magic. Then it’d be for the best if I was a bit more ruthless this time. If I can beat them down first then I’d have two less people to deal with.

That guy Yamada probably doesn’t have any fighting capacity. He didn’t bring a sword along, so if I rule him out, I only actually have five opponents.

“Aniki, use Rio Battle Method to beat him down in one go?” Ichimin proposed.

“Hm~~~ Not a bad idea, we shouldn’t waste too much energy on this kind of trash.” Ichikun nodded.

Ichikun charged in front of me and at the same time he swung his fist at me. His leg didn’t remain idle when I caught his fist and used his knee to strike my belly. I dodged it but discovered that the one called Ichimen already ran up beside me. His fist directly struck my face and immediately, I fell to the ground.

Satsuki was there crying: “Who will come~~ who will come help him?”

Satsuki was pounding the Isolation Shroud.

“Aniki... sure enough, this brat has few moves. His reaction speed’s pretty fast.”

“That’s true, but right now he can’t even get up anymore.”

I shook my head and quickly got back up.

Those two guys, did they concentrate spiritual energy into their fists?

Originally, I had no chance of winning, but right now my odds of success were extremely good.

I recalled now that this world’s boxing match and what not, all relied on concentrating spiritual energy in order to fight. So long as one person gets knocked out by spiritual energy, the attacker is considered the victor. They don’t pay attention to which spot is the most effective to hit. Since that’s the case...

“What? He actually stood back up?”

I took advantage of the time they spent being shocked and charged over. My fist struck the one called Ichikun in the chin and followed it up with a spin kick at the one named Ichimen. He got sent flying into the air for quite a distance.

Even though I sent them flying, I didn't remain idle. The one called Ichikun got hit in the chin with a fourth of my strength; it was enough power to knock him out.

Although the one the called Ichimen received a kick from me that contained more power than the punch, he didn't necessarily faint. I promptly ran up, grabbed his collar and landed a punch on his chin...

In this manner, there were just five remaining.

“How's that possible? How's this possible?” The six people who were originally watching were all scared silly.

What a good opportunity. I called them idiots and they really were idiots. How do you have time to be shocked in the middle of a fight?

With a kick, I sent Yamada flying and the four magicians who were scared into chanting their spells at once got beaten down after I quickly adopted chin attacks.

Finished four off, and now there was only one left...

“Brat... No... Bro, please, please don't hit me. I can only use the Isolation Shroud, I don't have any other spells. So, since you are a great and magnanimous person, forgive me?” The shroud releasing boy threw his magic wand on the ground and raised his hands in the air as he surrendered.

“And if I don't forgive you?” This damned fatass. Although he said he that he surrenders, his entire face said that he was unwilling.

“Th...Then you won't be able to leave my Iso...” Before he even finished speaking, I knocked him out.

You think I'm stupid? Even though the nerd Lin Xiang can't use magic, he could still remember the special properties of most spells. Isolation Shroud, as long as you knock out the caster, it will naturally dissipate.

After fatty fell, the Isolation Shroud broke down.

I breathed a sigh of relief. I didn't get arrogant because the reason I won was due to the fact that they underestimated me too much and also because they were way too surprised.

If it were only two from very the start that fought me, then perhaps I could win. But, dealing with magicians who use magic was akin to me bringing out a knife while the other person brings out a semi-automatic pistol during a war. Although semi-automatic pistols needed time to load, if there's a lot of people together, they could no doubt combine together to be like a small submachine gun.

Everything happened in a split second. Satsuki stared at me with a dumbfounded expression as glittering teardrops streamed down her face.

I walked in front of her, lightly touched her, and said: "C'non. Let's go buy your notebook."

Satsuki stood there, gazed at me for a moment and used her delicate finger to poke me: "Are you... really... Lin Xiang?"

"Absolutely." I lifted up my backpack and patted her shoulder: "Let's go, we were already held up for ten minutes."

Satsuki looked at the seven who were on the ground who were silent and unconscious, and said: "They... won't die, right?"

"They won't, they just fainted, that's all." I walked over to the groaning Yamada, and then laughingly said: "Yamada-kun, sorry, you couldn't cripple me."

Satsuki patted off the dust on her body and Yamada Yukihiro roared as we left....

"Why aren't you saying anything? Didn't you say you needed to buy a notebook? You're still not going in?" I brought Satsuki to the stationery store, but discovered that she only kept staring at me and didn't say that she was going in.

"You're really Lin Xiang?" Satsuki asked me.

"Yes, my little princess." As I said that, I stretched my hand over and wiped the

tear stains off her gloomy face.

Satsuki's face quickly became red. She knocked my hand away: "I'll wipe it myself." She said, as she wiped her eyes that become red from crying.

Nerd Lin Xiang~ Satsuki cried for you, she really treats you like a friend. Are you happy?

"When did you become so able to fight?" After wiping her enchanting eyes that were red from crying, Satsuki looked at me and asked.

"Alright, the truth is that I practice boxing at home." In my original world, if I couldn't fight, wouldn't I have died a long ago?

"Really?" Satsuki opened her eyes wide, with a face full of disbelief.

"Why would I lie to you? Didn't you see me knock them out in one move? That's the result of my training."

"It certainly did look like that." Satsuki's face looked like she was recalling the events from that time.

"Since there's an opportunity right now, I'll just tell you. As long as you use a certain amount of spiritual energy and hit someone's chin, the force of impact on the chin will shake the brain. This will create a moment of dizziness or unconsciousness. Naturally, don't use too much force as too much force would cause brain concussion."

"So it was like that..." Satsuki nodded as she looked at her fist.

"Alright, go and buy the notebook." After saying that, I led Satsuki into the stationery store.

.....

"Lin Xiang, how did you know that I live here?" Satsuki was not against me sending her home today.

"You know that big supermarket near your home? I frequently go there to buy my groceries. I saw you around here once, so that's why I knew." The Satsuki in this world and the Satsuki in the other world had different types of family too. In this world, Satsuki's family seemed to be rich and pretty well off, since I saw that they own a huge house.

“Oh so that’s it. As you send me home, you could also buy groceries on the way?”

“Yeah. So I’m going to go now..” I said as I started to turn around.

“Lin Xiang...”

“What?” I turned my head back and see Satsuki looking at me with a small red face. Then she shook her head: “Nothing.” She ran back into her home.

How strange... As I left Satsuki’s house, I went to the supermarket to buy groceries.

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 1 Chapter 6 – Dragon God, the Color Pink, and the Cold**

“I’m back.” I opened the door and Silent Water came out to greet me.

“Welcome back.” Silent Water said. She then took the plastic bags and backpack from my hands to carry.

“Oh~ Thanks, Silent Water.” Silent Water really was too courteous.

“It’s... no big deal.” Silent Water said, embarrassed.

“Master... What happened to your face?” Silent Water asked.

“Oh~~This... I wasn’t careful and fell.”

“Really... you need to walk more carefully.” Silent Water said and then touched my face with her hand. A sharp ice-cold feeling suddenly permeated my heart. The swelling on my face disappeared.

“En, I will.” Ah~ Silent Water is truly thoughtful and caring.

.....

After I finished eating, I quickly took a bath and then collapsed on the bed. At this moment, my cellphone’s ringtone rang. I opened my cell and saw that it was a text message from Satsuki.

–‘Idiot, remember to properly treat your wound.’

‘Got it, my princess.’

–‘Idiot...you really are an... idiot.’

“Yes, yes, yes, I’m an idiot.”

After the text message was sent, I tiredly fell asleep.

-----  
“Boy!” That annoying voice was back.

I opened my eyes and discovered that the two pugnacious dragons appeared in front of me again.

“Freed. I mean it, don’t fight with me again today.” The black dragon said.

“As long as you aren’t annoying.” The white dragon snorted.

“What? You’re actually complaining that I’m annoying?” The black dragon opened his eyes wide, extremely wide.

“You are annoying.

“You want to f\*cking fight?”

“A fight it is, you think I’m afraid of you?”

The two stupid dragons started fighting the moment they arrived, I was a bit angry. I yelled at them: “Are you guys finished? Hey, forcibly entering into a person’s dream and disturbing their sleep, don’t tell me it’s so you could let me see you guys fight?”

The dragons who were already prepared to fight, after being scolded by me, unexpectedly didn’t have their usual high and mighty attitude. They promptly bent and bowed their heads: “Right, right right, what you said is right.

“So, quickly speak, what are you guys?” Since they stopped fighting, I wanted to know why I continuously saw them in my dreams for the past three days.

Then, the black dragon puffed out his chest, I knew what he wanted to do: “Don’t you give me a long f\*cking introduction, get straight to the point.”

The black dragon let out all his air at once and then weakly said: “Yes...”

“I am called Yalide and he is called Freed. We were originally God’s mounts.”

“Wait, wait. The Dragon God from the legends, there are actually two?” I always believed that there was only one.

“There are actually two.” The white dragon stroked his whiskers and said: “I am the Scion of Light and he is the Scion of Darkness. Before God’s death, we were his mounts, but after his death, the perfect order of the world began to crumble. At that time, the Underworld gradually developed into the Demon World.

Underworld? I’ve never heard of that before.

“The Demon World was originally called the Underworld; it was the place where the spirits of deceased humans were sent.” The white dragon saw the confusion on my face and explained.

“Ah~~ It was placed under my supervision.” The black dragon proudly said.

“Hmph~ You still have the nerve to say that.” The white dragon gave the black dragon a cold stare, and then continued to say: “We each had supervision duties, I watched over Heaven and Yalide watched over the Underworld. Then one day, millenniums ago, the places under our supervision that were originally neat and orderly, was once again thrown into chaos. Over in the Underworld, an enormous crack appeared. Yalide ordered a group of spirits to investigate, but didn’t expect that none would return. Afterwards, from within the crack, crawled out countless beings that you now call demons.

“En... Although it’s a bit different from what was written in this world’s legends, but it actually happened like that.” I called to mind the contents of what was written in the legends of this world.

“We named the crack, ‘Demonic Spring’; it’s a place that was an accumulation of resentment from deceased humans. Those resentments were caused by the materialization of the spirits that Yalide dispatched.” Said the white dragon, looking at the black dragon again.

The black dragon laughed ashamedly.

“Afterwards, the demons started to tyrannize the Underworld and kept multiplying. In the following generations, the Underworld which was originally the place where the spirits of deceased humans resided had become a habitat

for demons — the Demon World.” The white dragon sighed.

“So it was like that.” I nodded my head.

“Then, Freed and I sacrificed ourselves and sealed some powerful demons back into the Demonic Spring.” The black dragon said.

“Hey! Wait, wait. So you mean, it wasn’t that you annihilated them, like what’s written in the books?”

“Us? Though we did have enough power at the time to eliminate them, but we got caught in their plans from before and suffered heavy injuries; moreover, they were also a lot stronger than we imagined them to be. You should know the amount of resentment that humans have. The amount of hatred, jealousy and what not was too many to count. Not to mention, in the times of antiquity, your human wars, how many lives did they claim? How much resentment did they cause? Sealing them despite our heavily injured condition can already be considered pretty good.” The black dragon said.

“So it was like that. In that case, what should we do now?”

“You don’t need to worry. Naturally, since we gave up our lives to seal them, we had a backup plan. The black dragon proudly said.

“Oh? What’s the plan, don’t tell me that the seal is eternally unbreakable?”

“Obviously not, the plan we have is even more advanced.”

“How much more advanced is it?” It was actually more advanced than an eternally unbreakable seal? What was it? Dragon gods sure are impressive.

“It’s exactly that... their seal’s removal will free them one by one starting from the weakest to the strongest.”

“Wow! It’s that formidable?” Being unsealed one at a time... “Formidable my ass, aren’t they still being freed from their seal?” I yelled at the black dragon.

“Hey, it’s very formidable alright. In this way, we can fight them one at a time.” The black dragon said.

“Fair enough, what you said does makes sense. In that case, how low is their lowest level? I thought carefully about it, this method actually isn’t so bad.

“Heh, Demon King level.” The black dragon said, disdainfully.

“F\*ck, Demon King level? Are you joking?” Shit, the Demon King level that humans thought was the strongest was actually their lowest. Then what’s the highest level? Once they come out, wouldn’t the entire world be annihilated by them?

“I’m not joking. We sealed them over a thousand years ago, so you can think about it, in the chaos of war that have occurred in the modern times, haven’t a lot of people died as well? So, the high level demons from before, right now no matter how low level they were, they too would have become King class, right? As for King class...at this moment I’m afraid have already become Super King class?”

“.....” What the black dragon said was right, since the Demonic Spring is a place that is an accumulation of human resentment, then from before until now, they have definitely become even stronger.

“You can relax, kid.” The white dragon started to talk and said: “You possess our power, your existence is the demons’ nightmare.”

“Oh? Why do you say that?” I’m the demons’ nightmare?

“Listen, you possess my power. The power of light... can purify demons. At the same time, you possess the power of darkness, that can assist you in stopping the demons’ dark powers from devouring your soul. Perhaps, even converting it into becoming your own power.” The white dragon said.

“No wonder, I was hit by a superior demon’s fire and my soul wasn’t burned away.” Now, I finally figured out from that time that Su... Su something, I forgot. Anyways, I was immune to its magic.

“However, even if you can’t be swallowed by darkness, it still cannot prevent the physical harm that the darkness may bring.” So it’s like that, no wonder I felt a burning feeling at that time. It turns out that in the end I didn’t get burnt because I converted it into my own power...

“I understand.” Fortunately, I encountered that fire demon, it only used a magic attack, not a darkness arrow and the like.

“In addition, by all means you must not let anyone know that our souls are

residing inside your body.”

“I understand.”

“Also, regarding the matter of the Sacred Fire.”

“Oh? Sacred Fire?” Is he talking about that silvery white colored flame?

“That, however, requires burning your soul, in order to use that instant kill move to exterminate demons.”

“Ha?” After I heard that I got scared a bit.

Burning the soul? Then, if overused and the soul gets burnt away, wouldn't I drop dead?

“Just saying, that is something that I invented, hoh.” The white dragon proudly said.

You're proud of what? That move of yours is a suicidal move, you're actually proud of that?

“Freed, don't be proud, with that harmful move of yours, you'll die sooner.” The black dragon took the words right out of my mouth.

“But...” The white dragon still wanted to say something, but got stopped by the black dragon.

“Alright, the amount of time we have to talk to you today has already come to an end. So, see you again tomorrow.”

After the black dragon finished speaking, I woke up. I scratched my head, looked at the faintly floating lights outside the window blankly and muttered: “That dream's got more and more realistic.”

—————

After I ate the breakfast Silent Water cooked I headed off to school.

Inside the classroom, my classmates were still active and noisy, but I didn't see Yamada, probably got admitted into the hospital.

I sat down at my own seat, discovered that my desk-mate ——— Satsuki, that girl, actually didn't come.

What happened to her?

————— After school

Since Satsuki didn't come to school for the entire day today, I wasn't in the mood to attend class. Even though from the start I never really seriously attended class.

Fortunately, there wasn't English class today, so I slept for the whole day.

I planned to go to her place to see what's going on with her.

I arrived at Satsuki's home, that gigantic and beautiful house.

"Excuse me, is anyone home?" I yelled.

"Excuse me, is anyone home?" I yelled a couple times with no response. I originally planned to ring the doorbell, but discovered that the door wasn't locked. There was a slight opening.

Don't tell me it's a case of burglary?

With that kind of thought, my mind suddenly got alarmed.

I lightly pushed open the door, there was silence inside the house, there were only two pairs of shoes at the entrance, one pair was the pair that Satsuki wore to school, and the other were a pair of wooden slippers.

Extremely suspicious, I lightly took off my shoes and tiptoed inside.

— Living room, no indication of rummaging.

— Kitchen, there was a pot of water boiling.

Satsuki's house was really big, I entered many rooms and didn't discover anyone. Just as I arrived at the final room in the corridor, I heard, "En~~~ah, en~~~", like the sound a midget makes when they're unable to reach something that's placed too high.

Could it be that someone covered her mouth? At this very moment, I suddenly had a bad premonition, I immediately opened the door .....

.....

Before my eyes was a snow-white scene, there were two tiny peaks protruding

out and on top of the peaks were tiny pink peaches...

“Ah~~~~” Satsuki let out a squeal and immediately used a blanket to cover her snow-white body.

What happened?? My brain is in complete chaos... I... saw Satsuki's...

I immediately jumped out and shut the door: “Sorry, Satsuki.”

Satsuki's sobbing voice came out from inside the room: “Uuuuu ~~~ Lin Xiang, why're you here?”

“Because... you didn't come... to school, so... I came to your house to find... you, I... called for so long, no...body answered, there... fore, I thought... you were... in trouble. Who would've known... you were here wiping your body?” Satsuki's incomparably snow-white figure appeared in my mind once again, I didn't expect Satsuki to actually have such a good figure.

Not good, not good, I felt like I was about to have a nosebleed.

But, seeing that Satsuki wasn't in any trouble, the original worried feeling in my heart lowered by a lot.

“Jeez.... before coming.... you should have called me first.” Satsuki at this moment seems to have already stopped crying.

I quietly opened the door: “Sorry... I forgot.”

Satsuki had already put on her small bear pyjamas: “It is just a cold, I'm fine now.”

While speaking, Satsuki softly stood up. However, she lost her footing....

I quickly ran forward to grab hold of her: “Really, what are you doing?” Speaking of which, Satsuki's body feels really soft.

I touched her red forehead: “You have a fever?”

Satsuki's forehead was really hot.

“Don't have, don't have.” Satsuki wanted to push me away but she had no strength.

“Still insist that you don't have a fever? You don't even have the strength to push me away.”

“That’s.... because....” Satsuki’s face was really red. Furthermore, it was pretty hot as well. No matter how you look at it, it should be a fever right?

“Okay enough, quickly lie down.” While speaking, I carried Satsuki to the bed and covered her with a blanket.

“Are you hungry? I shall go and cook some porridge for you to eat.” I touched Satsuki’s forehead, it was really red and hot.

Satsuki looked at me dazed for awhile, afterwards she simply nodded and covered her head with her blanket.

“In that case I’ll be borrowing your kitchen for awhile.” There wasn’t anyone in Satsuki’s house? This is such a big house. What happened?

Furthermore this girl is also sick, did she catch a cold? Should be due to her crying yesterday, right? I remembered a television program that said that people who cry are more prone to catching a cold.

. . . . .

When I came to Satsuki’s house’s kitchen... I didn’t realise it before but this place was pretty messy, so I went to tidy the place up. Afterwards, I used her house’s pressure cooker, put some rice inside, and went out to buy ingredients.

The pharmacy was close to Satsuki’s house so I was able to quickly buy the medicine. When I came back, the porridge was almost done. I added some salt, some cauliflower, and the bowl of light cauliflower porridge was ready.

“Here, drink some porridge.” I took the medicine and carefully brought the porridge to Satsuki’s room.

Satsuki sat up, and complained: “I already said that this is just a cold.”

“Cold? Aren’t you having a fever?” I put my hand onto Satsuki’s forehead again. Then, her face grew red and hot again: “Still saying no?”

“That’s because....”

“Because of what?” I took the bowl, used the spoon and scooped up some porridge. Afterwards I blew for a bit and moved the spoon towards her mouth: “Open wide.”

This girl, what happened? Her face is growing redder? If it's the usual her, I wouldn't have worried, but now she's sick. This wasn't good.

Satsuki looked at me and then slightly opened her mouth. I put the spoon in and afterwards, pulled it out: "Have you become a fool? That you even want to eat the spoon as well?"

"I...."

"You what? Can't even finish your sentence? Jeez, what happened? Weren't you fine a few days back? How'd you catch a cold? Didn't you say idiots can't get sick?"

"You're the idiot, stupid Lin Xiang."

"Haha, you're so cute. Once you get angry, you speak normally again." Once again I scooped some porridge, blew it and put it beside her slightly thick lips.

"Nag... gy..." Satsuki took another bite.

Naggy? This girl, she's talking with pauses, so her fever must have risen?

.....

"Take the medicine after you're done eating, understand?" I point towards the medicine on the table

"Okay..." Satsuki replied obediently.

"Speaking of which, where's your family?"

"Them? Mom and Dad went on a business trip yesterday. They will be back in four days. Grandfather and grandmother passed away a long time ago..."

"Is that so? Sorry to hear that." There was a big difference between Satsuki's family situation in this world and the previous world. In the previous world, her grandfather only passed away last week, whereas her grandmother was still very healthy. Her parents wouldn't leave her alone in the house even if they have to go on a business trip....

"It's...o... kay."

"Here, eat this quickly and get well soon."

"I already said..." Satsuki didn't finish what she was saying and just looked at

me.

“What?”

“No... nothing. This.... feeling.... isn't that bad.”

“Huh? Did the fever burn your head? That you would even say that getting sick wasn't so bad?”

“Humph~~~ Your brain's the one that is burnt! Stupid.”

.....

“In that case, I'm going back, bye.” It's already pretty late, I've forgotten to give Silent Water a call so I need to hurry back; if not she would worry.

“You're... leaving?” Satsuki seems a little reluctant.

Yes, although you're sick, there wasn't a reason for us to be alone in the same room right?

“Don't tell me you want me to stay?” I faked an indecent expression as I look at Satsuki.

“If you.... insist on stay... it's not like I will refuse....” Satsuki actually wasn't angry?

Even though I accidentally saw her changing... I know we have a mutual understanding of not bringing that embarrassing incident. However, the sun was almost about to set. I know I won't do anything to her, but wasn't she afraid that I would do something to her?

“Jeez.” I use some strength as I pat her head, and messed up her hair: “A man and woman alone together, I can't guarantee nothing will happen.” While speaking, I pick up my bag and leave the room.

“Wait.” Satsuki calls for me.

“Is something wrong?” Satsuki's face is very, very red.

“Tomorrow... accompany me... to buy magic books.”

“Okay.” I nod my head and turn to leave.

“Wait...”

“Is there anything else?”

Was this girl scared? However... a girl, alone in the house, no matter what, would be afraid.... But Silent Water was alone at home as well....

“No...nothing...else.” Satsuki turned around and returned to her room.

“Satsuki... if you’re afraid of being alone, then think of Takahashi-kun, and you won’t be that afraid anymore.” I had no other solution. Satsuki was only a friend. Even if it was fine for me to stay, i would still feel a little inappropriate no matter what.

Satsuki didn’t say anything and I just stood there for awhile. Since I was unsure of what to say, I didn’t say anything until the end: “In that case, I shall take my leave. Satsuki, you must come to school tomorrow. Today, without you there... it feels like.... something was missing.”

After I finish speaking, I went home.

.....

When I just reached home, I saw Silent Water worriedly stood in front of the door: “Silent Water?”

“Master ! ?” Silent Water’s troubled expression disappears when she sees me.

“Where did you go? Silent Water was very worried.”

“Sorry, Silent Water. Something happened today so I was late. Did you stand here and wait for a long time?”

“Its not that long...”

Not long? Silent Water, you’re really bad at lying. When I left Satsuki’s house, I called home but no one answered. I remembered I taught you about the phone’s function before.

I went to the market to buy some food, which took around 15 minutes. Walking back takes another 20 minutes. In that case, she stood waiting here for at least half an hour?

Suddenly, I felt very apologetic towards Silent Water. I pat her head: “Let’s... make dinner?”

“Yes!” Silent Water happily replied.

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 1 Chapter 6.5 – Satsuki Risa Short Story**

When I woke up this morning, I felt a little dizzy. Looks like I’ve caught a cold. This is all that stupid Lin Xiang’s fault. Not sure why these two days I had a feeling that he changed a lot. Whenever I’m with him, for some reason my heart always beats so fast.

As for my cold, it should’ve been caused by what happened two days ago, when Lin Xiang helped me remove the rice? My body started to feel hot after that so I went to wash my face with cold water.

“Stupid Lin Xiang, idiot Lin Xiang.” I cursed as I hugged my pillow.

After I called my homeroom teacher to take a leave, I laid down on my bed to sleep. This time, Lin Xiang’s smiling face appeared once again.

Don’t think, don’t think, don’t think. Why am I always thinking of him?

The worried expression he had when he saved that child, the cool side of him when he beat down those bullies, was constantly appearing in my head. More importantly, was what he actually said to me: “I want to protect you, I don’t wish to see you get hurt.”

After hearing those words, my head was a complete blank, my ears kept repeating those words he said.....

Afterwards, I was pulled out of the Isolation Shroud by him..... after seeing him get hit once, at first I thought that he was going to get beat up. However, he turned the tables in a manner so cool and so quick. And here I was crying so hard.....

Today I’m not going to school, can’t see him..... No, no, can’t see Takahashi-kun. My heart feels as if it was blocked by something....

Mom and dad went out so nobody’s home. This was the worst.....

I carried my heavy head to the nearby pharmacy to buy some medicine;

afterwards, cooked and ate some porridge. Since I was too tired, I didn't clean up and went straight to bed to rest.

It should be around 12 now? I wonder if he had eaten yet. Strange, why am I always thinking of him? I knew it... I became strange.....

I buried my head in the blankets, and kept thinking about his smiling face....

"Stupid Lin Xiang...." I scolded him once and I fell asleep....

.....

"Ah~~~~" I turned my lazy waist, and looked at the clock. It was already 3:30 pm. School should be ending soon?

After sweating so much, my cold was already cured. I guess I should go get a basin of water and wipe my body?

I poured a basin of water, returned to my room and started to strip. Hehe, I could never get tired of seeing this pajamas. The small bear is definitely the cutest.

After removing my shirt, I started to wipe my body. After wiping the front, my back was a little out of reach: "En~~~ah, en~~~".

Oh~~~ this is so difficult.

*Kacha.* Not sure who opened my door.

I looked up.... it was actually Lin Xiang. Why's he here?

*Kya~~~~~* I wasn't wearing any clothes.....

"Sorry, Satsuki...." Lin Xiang immediately closed the door and went out.

Jeez, why's he here? Oh no, he saw my body..... "Uuuuuuu~~~~~ Lin Xiang, why're you here?"

However, even though I felt a little embarrassed, I didn't really hate it. *Kya~~~~~* Why am I thinking like this? I'm not thinking straight.

"Because.... you didn't come.... to school, so.... I came to your house to find.... you, I.... called for so long, no...body answered, there... fore, I thought... you were... in trouble. Who would've known... you were here wiping your body?" From the door came Lin Xiang's panicked voice.

That idiot, he was actually caring about me, and even personally came to my house. This is really great.... no, is really stupid.

Since it was a careless mistake, I should just forgive him: “Jeez.... before coming.... you should have called me first.” I quickly put on my shirt.

At this point, he carefully opened the door, and peeked inside. This idiot has such a red face, so cute, no, is so hateful. He scratched his head, embarrassingly said: “Sorry.... I forgot.”

“It was only a cold, I’ve already recovered.” While speaking, I stood up. Jeez, after being seen, my body started to feel weak again.

Little did I know, I accidentally stepped on the blanket, slipped and was about to fall to the ground....

Suddenly, with Lin Xiang’s fast movements, he took no time to reach my side and held me. Jeez, since when did he become so agile?

This warmhearted sense of security when I’m in his arms, what exactly is this feeling?

Ah? Where is his hand touching? Ah~~~~ That’s my....

“You have a fever?” He touched my forehead.

“Don’t have, don’t have.” Dammit, I want to push him away but I can’t seem to muster up any strength.

“Still insist that you don’t have a fever? You don’t even have the strength to push me away.” He’s worried about me? And, is he pretending to not notice or is he doing it on purpose?

“That is.... because....” Ah~~~~~ Stupid Lin Xiang. Your hand’s touching my chest! How am I supposed to bring this up....

“Okay enough, quickly lie down.” While speaking, he carried me to the bed, and gently cover me with my blanket.

Once again he started to pat my head, and gently said: “Are you hungry? I’ll go and cook some porridge for you to eat.”

What’s going on? What is this? Why am I feeling so blessed?

I nodded my head and hid inside my blanket.

Ah~~~~~ What is happening to me? I don't have these sort of feelings when it comes to Takahashi-kun, but why do I feel this way when it comes to Lin Xiang? Don't tell me that it's because he's like my sister?

"In that case I'll be borrowing your kitchen for awhile." After saying this, he left.

Hu~~~~~ Nearly suffocated to death, my head came out from the blanket. My heart's beating so fast.....

Jeez, I really became strange. No, not me, it's Lin Xiang who changed. That's right, I became like this because I was affected by him. Yup. Must be it.

Speaking of him, what is it that's taking him so long? How long has he been gone? Only one minute? How was this possible? I obviously felt that a long time has passed.

I looked at the ticking clock and thought that it must have been broken.

So long~~~~~ What is he doing? Only 3 minutes have passed? That can't be right? This clock was definitely broken.

.....

Gu~~~~~ 12 minutes had already passed. This Lin Xiang, What on earth is he doing?

Just as I was about to check on him, the door opened.

In one of Lin Xiang's hand was a bowl of smoking hot porridge and another, some medicine.

Medicine? Speaking of this, Lin Xiang doesn't have my house keys. Was it today when I went to buy medicine that I had forgotten to lock the door?.....

Ah~~~ Lucky it was Lin Xiang who came.

"Here, drink some porridge." He placed the medicine on the table and moved a chair to my bedside.

"I already said that this is just a cold." Besides, I'm fine now.

"Cold? Aren't you having a fever?" He put his hand on my forehead again, and

spoke with a hint of anger: “Still saying no?”

“That is.... because....” Jeez, after he touched me, my body became hot again. Stupid Lin Xiang, stupid Lin Xiang.

“Because of what?”

Because you’re too gentle ah~~~~~ Stupid~~~~~

He scooped a spoonful of porridge, blew it, and moved it near my mouth: “Open wide.”

What’s this? This idiot obviously looks annoyed, but why is it giving me a warm feeling instead? This warm feeling of happiness, what is it?

“You’re so disoriented that you even want to eat the spoon as well?” As he said this, he pulled out the spoon in my mouth.

“I.....” Jeez, I was only just dazed for awhile.

“You what? Can’t even finish your sentence? Jeez, what happened? Weren’t you fine a few days back? How’d you catch a cold? Didn’t you say idiots can’t get sick?”

“You’re the idiot, stupid Lin Xiang.”

“Haha, you’re so cute. Once you get angry, you speak normally again.” Dammit, even though I don’t want to admit it, but once he smiles, he really is handsome. And.... He actually said I’m cute.....

“Nag.... gy...” Oh no, why is my body hot again.

“Once you eat finish the porridge, take the medicine. Understand?” He pointed towards the medicine on the table.

“Okay....” Jeez, why didn’t I notice his gentle side earlier.....

“Speaking of which, where’s your family?”

“Them? Mom and Dad went on a business trip yesterday. They will be back in four days. Grandfather and grandmother passed away a long time ago...”

“Is that so? Sorry to hear that.”

“Its... o... kay,” Jeez, after seeing him looked so depress, even I’m starting to

feel sad.

“Here, eat this quickly and get well soon.”

“I already said.....”

“What?”

“No... nothing. This.... feeling.... isn’t that bad.” Letting Lin Xiang feed me made me feel so warm, so nice.

“Huh? Did the fever burn your brain? That you would even say that getting sick wasn’t so bad?”

“Humph~~~ Your brain’s the one that is burnt! Stupid.” How can you possibly understand when you’re this stupid?

After drinking the porridge he fed me, I realised that the food he cooked was actually very delicious. This was obviously a porridge yet it was so sweet.....

“In that case, I’m going back. See you tomorrow.” Time sure flies really fast; Lin Xiang said that he was going to leave.

“Are you.... leaving?” I’m not sure why but when I heard him say he was going to leave, my heart suddenly tightened.

“Don’t tell me you want me to stay?” He pretended to look like a pervert as he looked at me. Please... your appearance was not the type that could look perverted okay?

“If you.... insist on staying.... it’s not like I will refuse....” I can’t believe I said that.

“Jeez.” He used some strength and patted me head. Every time he does this, my body always goes numb, but it feels good.

“A man and woman alone together, I can’t guarantee nothing will happen.” While talking, he picked up his bag.

“Wait.” What is going on? I can’t believe I actually wanted him to stay..... it should be because I trust him so I would have these kinds of thoughts..... even if he did do anything to me.... I also... Ah~~~~~ seriously, what am I thinking?

“Is something wrong?” His bright and handsome smile.... made my heart beat

very violently.

“Tomorrow... accompany me... to buy magic books.”

“Okay.” He nodded his head, turned, and was about to leave.

“Wait....” Strange. It seems that I don’t want him to leave....

“Is there anything else?”

“No... nothing... else.” I quickly closed the door.

“Satsuki.... if you’re afraid of being alone, then think of Takahashi-kun and you won’t be afraid anymore.” Takahashi-kun? Speaking of which..... I haven’t even once thought about him today. Furthermore, yesterday night I even dreamt of Lin Xiang.... I realised that in the past, I’ve never dreamt of Takahashi-kun before....

“In that case, I shall take my leave. Satsuki, you must come to school tomorrow. Today, without you there... it feels like.... something was missing.” Was it because I wasn’t there that he felt lonely? I feel.... so happy....

After he finished speaking, the sound of footsteps came. I slightly opened the door and looked at his leaving figure. My heart felt so sad, I wish... I wish... he would stay.... and cook something for me to eat. That’s right, it must be because his food was delicious that I wanted him to stay?

He took away the dishes as well. Jeez... how thoughtful is he....

“Ka~~~ deng~~~” The sound of the main door closing rang.

He left! I felt depressed as I opened my door:” Seriously... what is happening to me?” After hearing the door closed, I immediately felt empty

I decided to eat some more porridge so I walked into the kitchen. When I arrived there, what was once a messy kitchen that was caused by me, was now currently a clean and spotless kitchen.

“Jeez, that thoughtful idiot....” This time, I thought of his bright smiling face again.

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 1 Chapter 7 – Magic Replenishment, Short-Tempered Satsuki and the Strange Meiko-sensei**

Because of last night's matter, I decided to get up a bit earlier today and diligently cook a delicious breakfast for Silent Water.

Yesterday night, the white dragon known as Freed and the black dragon known as Yalide appeared again. This time they didn't fight; rather, they discussed with me about how to quickly defeat the demons.

As we chatted, the white dragon said his light magic was good and the black dragon said his dark magic was good as well. In this manner, they got into another argument, but they didn't fight, which was good. Moreover, from their argument, I also understood which attacks were effective in killing demons.

If it's a relatively high level demon, I could absorb its dark magic and then convert it into my own power. Finally, I can then unleash my Sacred Fire — that way, I can avoid burning my soul. However, the prerequisite is that I must be battling a fire demon. Furthermore, if I don't absorb enough power then I still need to consume a bit of my soul to activate the Sacred Fire.

In addition, I also became aware that the Sacred Fire can eliminate demons that are possessing human bodies. That bit, with regards to me, is the most important discovery. That's because up until now, expelling a demon from a possessed body was the hardest undertaking in the modern world — let alone eliminating it.

"Master?" Silent Water rubbed her freshly woken eyes and said with a bit of shock as she saw me in the kitchen.

"Yo~ Silent Water, good morning." Having caught sight of Silent Water's messy hair, I felt that she was very cute. She should have just woken up.

"Good morning... eh?" At that moment, Silent Water realized that her hair was in a mess and immediately ran to the washroom.

Haha, sure enough, Silent Water is really cute. Only, her face seemed to appear a bit abnormal.

Ten minutes later, after washing up, Silent Water became a lot more spirited. Her hair was also combed as smoothly as it usually was. However, the weirdness

on her face still didn't go away.

Silent water looked at me a bit strangely and asked: "Master, today... why are you up so earlier? You obviously have to go to school, what if you're not getting enough sleep? This sort of stuff... won't it better if you hand it over to Silent Water?"

Silent Water, at the present, has basically already mastered my skills. In barely four days, she mastered my cooking skills that I spent five years on. In fact, the food she cooked was even more delicious compared to mine. Was this the the legendary "the student surpasses the teacher"?

"Today? I need to apologize for the matter from yesterday, so I'm cooking for Silent Water a serving of my specialty dish — egg fried rice. I believe you haven't eat this before..."

"You really don't have to apologize for yesterday..." Silent Water lowered her head, embarrassed.

"Silent Water... I don't have anything I can give you, so..." Right, I'm not Silent Water's real master and also haven't given her anything. Originally I said I wanted to take care of her, but presently the situation is in reverse and I'm being taken care of by her...She cooks the food and also cleans the house.

"No... Master already gave me a lot..."

The current atmosphere, how do you say it? In any case, it felt weird...

I saw Silent Water's sickly face and suddenly had an urge to want to embrace Silent Water?

"Mas...ter..." Silent Water's body trembled suddenly in my embrace.

"Sorry, I don't know... what this is about either." What's going on? Right after having the urge to hug Silent Water, in the next second I suddenly embraced Silent Water?

At that moment, I could feel that inside my body, something formless was flowing into Silent Water's body. Silent Water also felt that her hands, which she originally didn't know where to put, were now tightly embracing my waist.

After approximately 10 seconds, the feeling that resembled energy transfer

faded away. At that moment, the strangeness on her face already disappeared and her usual rosiness was restored.

“Master... thank you...” What happened?

“Thank me for what?” I thought Silent Water would get mad instead.

“Thank you, your... formidable magic power... giving a bit of it to me...”

Magic power? What’s this about?

‘Boy...’ At that moment the voice of the white dragon, Freed, came up by my ear.

‘Freed? What’s this about?’

‘After fusing for so many days, Yalide and I can now communicate with you through your conscious. Even though we can keep this up for at most 1 hour a day, it is enough for us to assist you during emergencies. Remember, this must not be exposed or it will bring about lots of problems.’

‘Fusing? For now, let’s not talk about this. What was that just now?’

‘That? Oh, that. That was the spirit’s magic replenishment. You bastard, still have the nerve to talk about not forming a contract with her? Do you know that for a spirit to remain and live normally in the human world, they need magic power?’

‘This.... I really didn’t know about it.’ That’s because it doesn’t seem to be written in any books. No.... as long as spirits exist, humans would probably always try to catch them to form contracts?’

‘Okay, now I will simplify it for you. After spirits form a contract with humans, they can share magic power with their master. Humans can recover spiritual power daily and convert it to magic power. With this, they can supply their spirits with the necessary magic power. However, spirits without a contract need to use their own magic power to continue living in the human world. If spirits do not have a master, they will have a very slow magic power recovery. Furthermore, for king class spirits like her, naturally they will need a lot more magic power to support their activities.’

‘King class spirits? What is this about?’ I’ve heard about sharing of magic

power before but I have never heard of king class spirits.

‘Are you serious? You don’t even know about this? King class spirits are the protector of the spirit race. In total, there are light, dark, water, fire, wind, lightning. These are the 6 basic elements. They are entrusted with the duty of protecting the spirit race. Their ancestors were our faithful servants.’

‘..... I really didn’t know about this.’ These books sure are useless. Furthermore, humans seldom venture into the dangerous demon world, so how would they be able to clearly understand about the spirits? In addition, not all spirits are as talkative as Silent Water.....

‘The higher the spirit class, the more magic power they need. The reason you unconsciously hugged her, was because your powers reacted to her needs. As a result, it led to resonance, which allows you to replenish her magic power through hugging her.’

‘So it was like this.... in that case, I can use magic now?’ I have always wanted to try those cool magic used by Takahashi.

‘Yes.... but the magic you use belong to the power type. Until you can learn to control that magic, all spells you use will go berserk.’ said Yalide.

So the reason was like this. This explains why during the first day, that mini tornado became a giant tornado instead.

‘How can I control this magic?’

‘I’m very sorry, but I don’t think there are any ways for you to control this magic.’

‘Why?’ Isn’t this too saddening?

‘It’s because you didn’t start practicing from a young age. Actually, it is all a coincidence that you are able to come to this world and us living in your body.’

‘Explain?’

‘As Yalide and I were sealed, our body had disappeared, however, our souls did not completely vanish. The current me is just a incomplete soul. Yalide and I had drifted though a few space, where time and space seems to be countless. I can’t remember drifting through how many space or how much time went by. Just like

this, we drifted around for more than one thousand years. Only until a few days ago, did we happen to drift to your previous world, and you, coincidentally fell into the sea, and we accidentally bumped into you which brought out your soul. We have never come across this before..... perhaps your soul gave us power, and allowed us to return to this space and time, and even live inside your body....’

‘So it was like this.....’

“..... Master..... Master..... Excuse me, how are you?” Silent Water, extremely flustered, pulled my arm.

“Ah? What is it?” While talking to Yalide, I had lost track of time.

“I knew it, it’s because you gave me too much magic power, so you’re probably tired?” Silent Water blamed herself as she spoke.

“No no no, this is definitely not it.... it’s just..... I was thinking too deeply about some things just now.....” I quickly patted Silent Water’s head.

Anyway, it’s good that nothing happened to her.....

“Don’t frown. I already said it doesn’t concern you. Have a seat, I’ll go and make some breakfast for you.....” While speaking, I continue to cook the fried rice from where I had left off.

After checking that I was no longer heavily distracted, the guilt she had had disappeared.

She quietly sat in front of the dining table and waited for me to finish cooking.

After taking a bite of the fried rice that I cooked, she covered her mouth and with a face full of happiness said: “So delicious.... Master.... thank you.”

“If you like it then it’s fine.”

.....

After coming to school and seeing Satsuki sitting on her seat with a reddish complexion, I feel at ease.

“Yo~~ good morning.” I put down my bag and greeted her like usual.

“Ah... good morning.” said Satsuki with a face full of happiness.

Did something happened? This expression that Satsuki has.

“Did something good happened?” I asked.

“Ah? nothing.” Satsuki blankly looked at my face, then returned to her usual self and said.

What a strange girl.

“Xiang~ good morning.” Takahashi came over and greeted me.

Today’s Takahashi is handsome like usual.

“Satsuki-san, good morning.”

“Ah, good morning.” To my surprise, Satsuki actually looked at Takahashi as she answered. I simply can’t believe this.

“Takahashi seems to be surprised by Satsuki’s change as well, then he showed his white teeth, and handsomely said: “Today’s Satsuki...-san, feels very different.”

“Really....?” Satsuki actually smiled towards Takahashi.....

“I knew it, Satsuki-san is really pretty.” Ah~~~~~ Takahashi is on the offense now

Go on, Satsuki, good luck, this is your chance to deepen your relationship with him.

“Haha, thanks.” Satsuki embarrassingly smiled.

What happened? Today’s Satsuki is so brave, from the looks of it, by tomorrow, their relationship should get hotter. Does catching a cold, change a person’s personality?

“Hey~~~ Satsuki-san, are you free today after school? I don’t have to work at the shop today, so do you want to watch a movie with me?” As expected of Takahashi, he’s so daring, so quickly asked Satsuki out to a movie.

Satsuki, you must grab hold of this opportunity, this is Takahashi’s first time asking a girl out to a date! ! !

Satsuki sweetly smiled and said: “I’m willing.” Wah~~~~ Today’s Satsuki is really brave.

The only thing is, what is this sour feeling in my heart? If anything else, I should

be feeling happy.....

“However, I’m really sorry Takahashi-kun.” Satsuki again said: “I’m not free today.”

Did I hear wrongly? Did I hear wrongly? Satsuki, what did you just say?

Takahashi-kun did not mind and said: “Is that so, then tomorrow? I’m on leave tomorrow as well. Shall we go tomorrow then?”

At this point, I completely understood why Takahashi was on leave, it’s obviously because of Satsuki that he applied for one? Takahashi is working in a very popular coffee shop and how can such a popular coffee shop allow people to take a leave for two consecutive days?

Actually.... its popularity, should be due to Takahashi’s handsomeness?

I went to Takahashi’s shop before and I completely understood that those young girls came just to see Takahashi.....

“Hmm~~” Satsuki thought for awhile, and said: “I’m not sure if I’m free tomorrow, why not wait till tomorrow and decide?”

Ha? Satsuki.... what are you saying.... do you even have other things to do? Don’t think I don’t know that you didn’t join any clubs. After school, at most you and a few other girls went to the cake shop to eat some cakes and headed straight home after that like a good girl....

— The above information, all of it came from the nerdy Lin Xiang that likes Satsuki, to the degree of madness, who after a few days of stalking, managed to obtain this information.....

“Is that so? Then I will invite you again tomorrow.” Takahashi coolly turn around, and went back to his seat.

“Hey.... what are you doing? That was such a good opportunity.”

“Did you forgot what we said yesterday, about accompanying me to buy magic books? said Satsuki.

“Can’t we just buy the magic books at a later time? Just now was a such a good chance....” Speaking of which, I had forgotten about this. This girl only dares to talk face to face with Takahashi, but is still timid, so she didn’t go with

Takahashi? But... seeing her expression, she doesn't look timid at all !!

"I don't know as well, I only know that I want to be with you.... No, what I said just now was wrong, what I wanted to say was, I wanted to buy magic books today." Satsuki's pinkish face suddenly reddened. Was it because of what she said that she's afraid that I will misunderstand?

The only thing is, this is so strange. In the past, whenever Takahashi is beside her, her face will be reddish no matter what, but now, there isn't any reaction when she talks to Takahashi face to face.

"Oh." I nodded my head. Even though I'm not sure what's going with her, if she doesn't feel like going, then she don't have to go.

.....

The first class was a spirit explanation class. Originally I was relatively interested in this class, however, since I could currently speak with Freed, I'd obviously listen to Freed's explanation of spirits.

I laid on the desk and seriously discussed with Freed about the origins of spirits and other things concerning spirits. Not sure when, Satsuki forcibly shook me and I lifted my head up to look. I discovered that the entire class was watching me, Satsuki was also looking at me awkwardly.

The teacher said to me angrily: "Lin Xiang-san? Don't tell me you think you completely understand spirits, hm?"

I stood up, bowed and said: "I'm sorry."

"Being apologetic allows you to attend class and not pay attention? Now, I'll ask you a question and if you can't answer it, then you will copy the book a hundred times for me."

I took a look at the book that appeared to be thick as a dictionary and swallowed my saliva: "Please ask your question."

"Hmph. Your attitude isn't too bad, but I won't let you go just like that." After saying that, he cleared his throat and then asked: "A spirit, how does it select the master it needs?"

"According to the degree of its summoner's spiritual power, it will select the

master suited for itself. If the summoner's power is too low and a high level spirit selected him, then the power of that high level spirit will be hindered and its power will decline. Therefore, high level spirits require humans with high concentration of spiritual power to summon them into the Human World. However, for weak spirits, in order to avoid being hunted by demons, will also select a master suited for themselves. As a result, just because a spirit user has low spiritual power, it doesn't mean that they won't have spirits."

Satsuki originally wanted to open the book, she was certain that I wouldn't be able to answer. However, after my complete answer came out, she could only stare at me blankly.

The teacher's facial expression could not be described, he coughed suddenly and then said: "Not bad, you can be considered to have passed. In that case, here's another question."

I already knew he wouldn't let me go this easily. Just like the homeroom teacher.

I nodded my head.

"For the various kinds of spirits, how do they assist their masters?" The teacher's facial expression was very wicked, he appeared to be completely convinced that I wouldn't be able to answer.

At that moment, the students in the class also whispered: "What? Isn't that kind of difficulty clearly making someone copy?"

"Do you know?"

"I don't know."

"It not written in the book..."

"This shouldn't be content to be learned next semester, right?"

Satsuki also desperately flipped through the book, but once I opened my mouth to speak, she just stared at me: "Spirits, all together can be divided into 9 different attributes: wind, fire, water, lightning, wood, earth, metal, fog and poison." Light and darkness, I didn't dare to say. That was because nobody knew that there were light and darkness spirits.

I now recalled that the angels' "divine beasts", should be light attribute spirits and that the demons' "demonic beasts", should be darkness attribute spirits.

"They will select their own masters according to their own attribute. Some may choose identical attributes, while some may choose interdependent attributes. For example: fog attribute spirits, they can confuse enemies, that is, they can release a so-called illusion technique. No matter if it's to attack an enemy or to flee, they can play a very good role." I raised an example.

"Wind attribute spirits are able to hasten their masters' attack speed. Although they're classified as a magical-support type attribute, if they take the initiative to attack, their power isn't too bad. Fire spirits, with their astonishing destructive power, are capable of melting rocks with their flames. Water spirits, with a defensive power and an attack power that can be said to be perfect, are relatively popular spirits. Lightning spirits are the embodiment of thunder and lightning, and have extreme speed and formidable attack power; they are spirits that are relatively difficult to control. Wood spirits, being able to freely control plants, possess strong capabilities in pinning down enemy movement. Earth spirits, the most commonly seen type of spirit, have the Earth as their strength and possess frightening physical power. However, their attack power isn't too high. They are more commonly used in construction. Metal spirits are able to transform into various kinds of weapons and are relatively unusual spirits. Poison spirits are proficient with poisons and are basically very rare to see; most of them are contracted to dark magicians." I gave out all the spirits' capabilities, so I should be able to pass the test?

Once I finished speaking, besides Satsuki who had used a type of proud facial expression — 'He is my desk-mate' to look at me, all the other people used some unexplainable expression to look at me. The teacher clapped his hands and then nodded his head: "Lin Xiang-san...You don't have to listen to my class anymore. In fact, truthfully speaking, I believe spirit explanation class is a completely meaningless subject. The two questions you just answered are actually the crucial points we need to learn this year. We need to understand the criteria that spirits use to select their masters and the abilities of the various kinds of spirits, even though other people that may understand the abilities of spirits feel that knowing this is useless. However, they do not understand that a spirit's ability,

apart from one's own power, is the other condition in allowing oneself to become stronger. A strong ability user, the reason why they're strong is because they understand how to use their own power and their spirit's power to defeat their enemy. Since you are able to remember the effects of so many spirits, just by relying on that point, I understand that you already completely grasp the comprehension of what the abilities of spirits are."

At that moment, the teacher's facial expression was extremely haggard... right, I remembered my classmates saying that when he was younger he was originally a powerful spirit user, but because his own spirit, in order to save him, forcibly released their contract and died. From then on, he fell from grace. Originally he was someone capable of becoming an elite guardian of the Human World, but now he has become a no-name teacher.

"You can sit down first." The teacher waved his hand and then pulled himself together and said: "I said he doesn't have to listen to my class, but that doesn't mean that the rest of you can. You guys need to seriously pay attention and understand spirits from head to toe."

Since he said I didn't need listen to his class, by right, I could properly lay down to chat with Freed.

----- After Class -----

"Lin Xiang, not bad, for an idiot." Satsuki happily patted me, making it seem like she was the one who answered.

"I'm an idiot... in that case, what are you?" I raised my hand in preparation to mess up Satsuki's hair. She didn't evade; rather, she took the initiative to stretch her head over.

I saw Takahashi coming over, stopped, and immediately withdrew my hand.

"Xiang~ You are really impressive, even Fukichi, that stubborn old man, was helpless against you." Takahashi said a word of praise to me and then shifted his eyesight over to Satsuki.

"Satsuki-san, since there is a 10 minute break now, how about we go buy some juice? I'll treat you."

"Thanks, Takahashi-kun, I'm not thirsty." After saying that, Satsuki took out

her English book and started to study some words.

Takahashi paid it no mind and smiled: “In that case, good luck with your studying, I won’t disturb you.”

That period was English class, I didn’t dare to sleep. At least in her class I don’t sleep, but I’m not like the other male students, continuously staring at Ijima Meiko’s face in hopes that her beautiful electrifying eyes could settle over their bodies for just a moment.

As for me, I was looking at the English text in the back. That’s because, I discovered something fascinating. The nerdy Lin Xiang’s academic achievement was 2nd place in his entire grade, but I knew that he mechanically memorized everything in order to obtain that kind of achievement.

English, with regards to him, was the hardest subject. But right now, no matter which page I flipped to, I could actually understand every page, seemingly as if I originally spoke English.

This fascinating matter made me feel endlessly excited. I continuously flipped through the book, looked at the text that I previously didn’t understand, completely understanding them now.

“Is there a problem with the book? Lin Xiang-san?” All of a sudden, an extremely compelling voice rang by the side of my ear.

I raised my head to look. Meiko-sensei, at some unknown time, stood beside me.

‘Shit, I was momentarily too excited to the point that I was in a trance and didn’t take note of her coming.’ My mind was secretly shocked, but thinking carefully, what was there to be afraid of?

“Reporting to sensei, there isn’t anything wrong.” I replied like a soldier.

At that moment, a pleasant laughter that seeped into a person’s heart rang in the peaceful classroom. I only saw Meiko-sensei use her beautiful smile to look at me: “You’re very amusing, the you from before was very timid. Is it that after catching a cold, a person will change? Actually saying ‘reporting to sensei?’ haha~~~”

Catching a cold will change a person, that point, I agreed; Satsuki was just like that. However, that was the first time I saw Meiko-sensei laugh. She laughs so beautifully.

At that moment, I clearly detected the killing intent within the eyes of the male students in the class. That's probably because Meiko-sensei, said to be an ice-queen, has never laughed in class before.

You must understand, other male students have racked their brains in hopes of gaining her one laugh. But at that moment, because of my one phrase, she laughed so happily.

The male students in the class naturally enjoyed her beautiful smile, but at the same time, also had produced some resentment towards me.

They were probably thinking: "How could that worthless Lin Xiang make Meiko-sensei laugh? I clearly thought of so many jokes, yet still couldn't get her to laugh once. Don't tell me I'm worse off than that worthless Lin Xiang?" I suspected that's what they're thinking.

"Alright, since you said it's so simple, stand up, I'll ask you a question." Meiko-sensei winked her eyes with a hidden meaning.

Sensei, can you take a look at the surrounding atmosphere? You actually winked that cutely at me?

I helplessly stood up, at that moment, Satsuki looked at me unhappily. Why was she unhappy? Right now I'm not worried about that, I'm only worried about what kind of question she would ask me.

"What's your name?" Meiko-sensei used English to ask me a simple question.

"Lin Xiang." I replied in English.

"Gender."

I glanced at the seemingly happy Meiko-sensei, and then helplessly replied: "Male."

"Aren't you a student?"

"Yes."

“Aren’t you a breakfast person?”

“Yes.” Right now I felt that the questions she asked have a degree of difficulty, because ‘aren’t’ questions in English are easily misleading.

“Aren’t you currently in class?” Right now I also realized that words she used in her questions aren’t the simple commonly used words learned in middle school. Rather, some are relatively lesser used and troublesome words. I really admire myself for actually picking it up.

“Yes.”

“Aren’t you fond of me?”

“Yes.”

“Pu~~~” Meiko-sensei laughed.

Satsuki also secretly hit me, what happened? Carefully recalled...

“No, no, I’m not fond of Meiko-sensei... Ah, wrong, I am fond of Meiko-sensei... ah... huh? Strange... that...”

Meiko laughed while covering her stomach with her hand and placed her other beautiful white hand — which countless boys yearn to hold — on my shoulder, as if we were good friends for many years. She laughed for a while and then said: “You’re so funny, I feel that you’ve really changed.” Right now she still spoke in English: “At the moment, do you like me or do you not like me?”

What’s so funny? I don’t understand...

“I...” At the moment, I saw Satsuki pout her lips, she appeared to be unhappy.

“I also... don’t know.” I really don’t know how to reply to her, if I said I don’t like her, it would appear as if I wasn’t giving her any face. Yet, if I said I like her, it would become a somewhat strange situation.

“Aiya, how terrible, I forgot we’re currently in class. Your change is to blame, causing me to lose my self-control.” Meiko withdrew her hand: “Alright, it seems as if you indeed already have a good grasp in this area that can easily be mixed up.” Currently, she was still speaking in English, some of the class basically can’t understand.

After that, she couldn't help but laugh again: "But, next time before you answer a question, you need to listen carefully to the question. Right now, I'll just consider that you like me. In that case, when will you invite me to go on a date?"

"Ha?" Not only did I yell out, but the boys in the class yelled out as well. That's because after Meiko finished asking her question, she spoke in Japanese, so the boys in the class also heard it.

"I..." I didn't know how to reply, I just said: "Sensei, don't forget we're currently in class... Pranks and what not, shouldn't be played."

"Right right right. But, not sure why, I just feel a lot happier right now, little Xiang. Oh, you don't mind me calling you that, right?"

"I don't mind..." Today's Meiko-sensei, her behaviour is really too strange.

"In that case, little Xiang, after class come find me in the office." Meiko-sensei turned around and walked back to platform.

"What's the matter?" I asked what was inside every male student's thoughts.

"You'll know when you come. Sit down first." Meiko-sensei winked at me, bewitchingly. Afterwards, she stood back up on the platform; her face already recovered its original ice-cold appearance.

I sat down, Satsuki coldly said: "How great, Meiko-sensei is inviting you to go to the office."

"Huh? What are you talking about? She's just joking."

"Oh? Joking?" At that moment, I realized that Satsuki was mad, because her tiny mouth was pouting.

Why was she angry?

"Right, didn't you see just now her face was full of desire to tease me?"

"That I really couldn't make out, I only made out that she is very interested in you."

"..." What else can I say? As I looked at Satsuki's pouting lips on top of her knitted eyebrows, I knew that right now, her mood was extremely bad.

The more I talk, the more mistakes I would make. The less I talk, the better. Therefore, I decided to not talk. If it was after class I could perhaps pat her head and divert her attention; but, right now we're in class, so I don't dare.

In any case, I knew Meiko-sensei was just joking.

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 1 Chapter 8 – Ijima Meiko, Takahashi's Hostility, and the Earth Dog**

After class had ended, Meiko-sensei smiled at me, picked up her books and left the classroom.

I have to say, ice queen beauty Meiko-sensei, it's fine if you don't smile, but once you smile, that's going to cause a lot of trouble.

The looks the guys shot at me made me uncomfortable; and I'm also not sure why Satsuki was upset as well, so I've decided buy some snacks to coax her.

After buying a bottle of orange juice and a bottle of Satsuki's favourite yogurt, I returned back to the classroom.

"Where did you go? Went to look for Meiko-sensei?" Satsuki unhappily asked.

"What's this?"

I placed the bottle of yogurt in front of her and she immediately smiled: "Ah~~~ my favorite. Lin Xiang, how did you know that this is my favorite drink?"

"I know everything about what Risa-chan likes."

"Idiot." Satsuki face reddened as she raised her voice and snatched the yogurt and orange juice from my hand.

"Hey hey, that orange juice is mine."

"Idiots don't get to drink." As she said this, she opened the bottle of orange juice. Her mouth latched onto the bottle, gulped it down in a few seconds and then followed up with a *hmph*~.

"You.... I'm thirsty."

"I've already drank from it before, you still dare to drink it?" Satsuki placed the

bottle in front of me.

Come on, why wouldn't I dare? You might not know but in the previous world, you often drink drinks that I've drunk before, and I often drink yours as well okay?

I picked up the bottle and drank a mouthful. Afterwards, I held the bottle in my hand: "Ku~~~ even though I haven't drink it for some time now, it still tastes so good."

It's been about a month since I drank this sort of orange juice. Now that I've drunk it, it still tastes as good.

"Stupid." Satsuki face became very red, and came rushing over, wanting to snatch the bottle from my hand: "Stupid, stupid, stupid. Stupid Lin Xiang. You...."

"Hey hey hey, what is it?" I was baffled.

Satsuki snatched the orange juice from my hand: "I told you to drink it, and you actually drank it."

"What's wrong with that?"

"But.... but.... isn't that an indirect kiss? This's common sense." Satsuki, with her reddish face, said in a low voice.

Indirect kiss ! ? I never thought of that before. In the previous world, you didn't care about it at all. Could it be that the you from the previous world lacked common sense?

"S.... sorry."

"Humph~~~" Satsuki snorted; looked at the bottle in my hand, and then back at me: "Forget it, since we're kind of like sisters." Afterwards, her small mouth once again latched onto the bottle opening, and drank a few sips.

After she finish drinking, her face became even redder, but she seemed happy.

She secretly peeked at me, and said: "Idiot, next time.... don't do this again."

"I definitely won't." How will there be a next time? Satsuki-san. What happened just now was seen by Takahashi. Even though the teacher isn't here

yet, the classroom is slightly noisy, slightly chaotic, and we are sitting quite far back, but did you know that you're one of the most popular and prettiest girls in our year? How many lessons are there when guys wouldn't look at you? Don't you realize that what you did just now was seen by some of the guys? Did you now know that there's a high chance that those guys will come and kill me?

“Why are you so serious..... actually you can.....”

“What'd you just said?” I couldn't hear what Satsuki was saying earlier.

“Nothing.” While speaking, Satsuki gave me her favourite yogurt and continued to drink that orange juice.

—————Lunch Break

“Class 1-C's Lin Xiang-san, please come to the staff room.” The announcement rang throughout the school.

Just as I took out my lunchbox, the announcement came. I helplessly stood up: “Hey, the croquettes are inside, help yourself. Remember to leave some side dishes for me.”

After informing her, I left the classroom.

What did they call for me for?

Two months since the start of school, not once have I been called to the staff room before.

— Staff Room

Pillar Nofu Academy's staff room was pretty impressive. The teachers' staff room was pretty much like a big companies', where the employees have their own office.

Who was it that called for me?

“Little Xiang~~~” At this moment, Meiko-sensei's very attractive voice rang.

The white blouse that she was wearing completely revealed her seductive figure. Together with that short black skirt and black stockings, it was practically an undisguised temptation.

“This way, Little Xiang.” Meiko stood in front of her office door, signalling me

to go in.

-----  
“Excuse me, is there something wrong?”

“You still have the nerve to ask, didn’t I ask you to come and find me after class?” Meiko poured two cups of tea, and gestured for me to sit.

After I sat down on the sofa, she came and sat beside me and stuck her body close to me: “Hey, Little Xiang....”

“Sensei, you’re too close.” I immediately stood up.

Today’s Meiko-sensei is so strange, did something happened?

She stood up, and charmingly said: “The day before yesterday, after school, I happened to go to that Mountain Spring Bookstore.”

Mountain Spring Bookstore? Wasn’t that where Satsuki and I went to buy our books? We were attacked by Yamada on the way there. Don’t tell me....

“So? Why are you looking so surprised? Did you feel like something was exposed?” Meiko’s expression became serious.

“I don’t understand what you’re talking about.”

“The Lin Xiang I know, is someone who’s very timid, and has no fighting skills.” The corner of Meiko-sensei’s mouth slightly moved, into a strange smile.

“Tell me, who are you? Where did the real Lin Xiang go?”

Meiko’s cold words were like needles as they pricked my heart with every word. Did she discover something?

‘Freed, Freed’ I tried to call for Freed, however, there wasn’t any reply.

‘Yalide?’ Yalide also didn’t answer.

Dammit, did we talk too much during the spirit explanation class and exceeded the time limit?

“Sensei? What are you talking about? I’m really Lin Xiang.” I tried to play the fool.

“Perhaps you’re able to deceive others, but you won’t be able to deceive me. I

can clearly detect the small change in the spiritual power in your body

“I really don’t understand what you’re....” Before I can finish, Meiko’s hand conjured up spiritual power. I knew this was called spiritual knife — it’s melee attack power was not small.

Her speed was fast, as her right hand swiftly did a cut diagonally. Shocked, I immediately dodged her attack, and pulled away from her.

“Sensei, I’m really Lin Xiang.” There truly is a reason why I can’t talk about it. Oh Meiko, don’t tell me, you want me to say that I came from another world? Yalide has repeatedly stressed that I must keep this and the fact that they are currently living in my body, a secret from others; even from my uncle.

“If you’re really Lin Xiang, then you shouldn’t be able to dodge that attack just now.” Meiko’s word may not meant much to her, but it meant a lot to me. Her words, severely hurt my pride, no, nerdy Lin Xiang’s pride.

I can’t believe, that in her eyes, nerdy Lin Xiang was a person with the weakest of the weakest ability. What a pity~~~ and here I thought that she was an amiable sensei.

Meiko initiated another attack at me. This time, I noticed her attack was faster than before. It seemed like her attack style appears to be Sanda?  
(TL: [Sanda](#) is a freestyle martial art)

Her legs came kicking towards me and I immediately blocked her kick. During the time that she attacked me, her hands were not idle. Her left hand came punching towards my head, and her right, aimed for my chest. How was I supposed to block that?

I lightly kicked her legs, and she immediately lost her balance, and fell backwards. Well~~~ after all, her center of gravity was focused on her upper body.

I swiftly held onto her waist. At this moment, her original white face, blushed and became red. This was my first time seeing her face redden; her cheeks became very red, like a girl who had just put on makeup, which became even more charming.

She repeatedly slapped against me: “Let go, let go, quickly let go.”

I quickly helped her up.

At that moment, a deep and powerful voice came out from the storage closet in Meiko's office: "Good."

"Worthy to be Grandmaster Battle Technician Lin Fan's son." From the storage closet, an elder with white hair and a youthful complexion emerged. The elder wore an ancient kimono, and the kimono was draped with a gray cloak; the feeling was quite like some great elder from some anime called "Bleach", that I watched in the past.

"Grandfather." When Meiko saw the elder come out, she went to walk behind the elder.

"Hoho, Little Xiang, I didn't scare you, right?" The elder kindly asked.

"No, no." Was he the headmaster, Ijima Michita?

"Hoho, that's good. First off, I must apologize to you. Come and sit down, I'll tell you what happened." The headmaster sat on the sofa.

The headmaster's body did not let out any spiritual energy, as if he was just like an ordinary old man.

Although his body didn't emit any spiritual energy, I could still feel that he was actually a very formidable person, whose spiritual energy achieved the rank of Battle Elder and is at its fifth or so level. No, as long as he continues to train, he should be able to reach Battle Saint in a short time.

I couldn't help but sigh in regret; at how frightening this person was, and how fearful his lineage was. The headmaster was at most 70, but yet, his spiritual power was this high; this was truly incredible. No wonder Meiko, only at the age of 20, was able able to reach the magus class; it was all inherited from her grandfather's spiritual power.

He patted my shoulder as I sat beside him, and he kindly smiled: "I'm really sorry that I could never find the time to visit you."

"....." I didn't say anything as I listened to him while Meiko was at the side pouring tea.

"Your father, Lin Fan, was my apprentice and my best friend." Headmaster

drank a sip of tea, and sighed: “He was my one and only apprentice, as well as the only one who can be counted as my most intimate friend.”

“As you know, your parents passed away when you were very young. They fought against the demons and died an honorable death; all of it was to protect you, and protect the Human World that’s full of life.”

I already knew of this; nerdy Lin Xiang’s parents were incredible people with very strong abilities. The only thing is, regarding the son they gave birth to — nerdy Lin Xiang, his ability was so bad that it was a complete mess.

“Just now, the reason why Meiko attacked you, was because she said that you had changed a lot and even saw you defeating 5 Junior Magicians and 2 Battle Masters by yourself. Due to this, she had a hunch that you might not be a real person, that you might be a demon in disguise, so she called me over to check whether or not you have demon magic in you while she fought against you.

“So it was like this.” I finally understood why Meiko attacked me. It’s because she suspected that I was a demon in disguise. However, it’s not surprise that she suspected me. After all, my change was really significant, furthermore, I even became bolder.

“Sorry Little Xiang.” Meiko smiled at me: “Truthfully speaking, when I saw you get beaten by those two Battle Master bullies, I wanted to step in immediately. However, I didn’t expect that not only were you not knocked out by their fists filled with spiritual power, you even turned the tables that quickly, which really shocked me.”

“Is that so.”

“Yes. Furthermore, during class, the things I did and said to you, were to test you. I wanted to see, when in front of so many people, what would your reaction be like. Who knew that you would be unexpectedly calm. At that point, I increasingly became more suspicious of you.” Meiko thought for a moment before asking: “Hey, can you tell me, where did you learn those boxing skills?”

“Even if you ask me, I also....” Don’t tell me you want me to say, I learned them when I was in the boxing club in Junior High? This world didn’t have any boxing clubs, and at most, boxing was only used in competitive sports. Let me ask you, where would you be able to find an idiot who uses their fists when fighting

demons?

Eh?..... Seems like there was an idiot who did that, and that's me. Lin Xiang.

"Meiko." Headmaster glanced at Meiko and said: "There are things that shouldn't be asked."

"Okay." Meiko pouted her lips like a small child, in an awfully adorable manner.

Ah, if only I managed to take a photo of it, develop it into a picture and sell it; I would most likely be a millionaire by now.

"Thing is, Little Xiang, I really admire your reaction speed; to able to instantly determine that Meiko's center of gravity was focused on her upper body at that time. Please forgive me, but I'm really curious, how'd you managed to do that?"

Yo Headmaster. You need to understand that in this world, people with strong spiritual power may be the strongest, but in my previous world, people with strong fighting abilities, are at the top.

In my previous world, there weren't any psychic-like powers, like spiritual power. What we relied on, were our fists and weapons. The most impressive of them, are guns. Unlike your world, like just a simple magic spell, it'll be able to cause a cannon-like damage.

However, you guys have a much quicker and more convenient ability, hence, didn't discover those simple fighting techniques.

"I don't know either, I was simply scared so I randomly kicked and Meiko-sensei fell."

"Really? Since you don't feel like telling us, then I won't force you." Headmaster saw through my lies in this short time, and happily smiled afterwards: "But, I saw a shadow of Lin Fan on your body. Looks like this is the birth of another Grandmaster Battle Technician."

Grandmaster Battle Technician? Headmaster, don't joke around. I'm just a person who can't even use simple magic. How would I even be able to apply spiritual power onto my weapons?

"Okay, it's lunch time now. Meiko, since you called Little Xiang over, I doubt that he had eaten anything yet. What are you going to do about it?"

“Don’t worry, grandfather, I was prepared for this.” As Meiko said this, she turned around and took the two bentos from her desk and passed one to me: “This is great, it’s a good thing that you aren’t a demon. But Little Xiang, you’re pretty impressive to lie to us for such a long time. We didn’t expect your combat skills to be this impressive.”

“I’m not that impressive, I got lucky. You know that too, I hardly have any spiritual power.”

“Sorry.” Meiko thought that she had hit a sore spot, and apologize to me.

“It’s fine.” While speaking, I opened the bento, picked up a piece of meatball and ate it: “Oh~~~ This, so good.”

“Really?” Meiko’s cloudy expression suddenly disappeared. I knew it, for people who cook, what makes them truly happy, was hearing the sound of praise from the people they cook for.

“That’s right, Meiko-sensei, it’s really good. Not only are you beautiful, even the food you cook is delicious as well, you’re simply just omnipotent in every aspect.” I exclaimed.

Truthfully speaking, girls like Meiko, whoever manages marry them, would definitely have the blessings of a good fortune.

“Jeez, what are you saying, you’re obviously still a child.” Meiko’s face reddened. She buried her face into the bento and started eating.

“My good granddaughter, where’s mine?” Ijima Michita helplessly looked at us as we ate our bentos.

“Grandfather has no need to eat.”

—————

After finishing the bento, I chatted with headmaster for awhile before heading back to class. I saw that Takahashi was currently talking to Satsuki. On one side, Satsuki was answering and the other, she kept looking at the bento box and the door.

“Why didn’t you eat?” I said when I saw the bento that I opened when I left, was now closed again. Even Satsuki’s bento hadn’t been touched.

“Yo~~ Lin Xiang.” Takahashi stared at me, then stood up.

His body was emitting a frightening aura. This sensation, it felt like a demon....

“You’re back.” The bored expression that Satsuki initially had, suddenly became cheerful.

“Yeah.”

“Nobuhiko, have you eaten?” That aura just now was probably just an illusion.

“Yeah.” Takahashi replied, and then went back to his seat.

The aura that his body was emitting, didn’t disappear.

What’s going on?

“Why didn’t you eat?” I didn’t bother with Takahashi anymore but rather, asked Satsuki why didn’t she eat the bento.

“Waiting for you.” Just as Satsuki finished her sentence, in the next moment, her face became red and said: “No, no, what I meant was, I was waiting for you to come back before eating. If not, you will complain that I ate finish your side dishes.

“Oh~~ this girl.” While speaking, I patted Satsuki’s head which she took the initiative to stretch out. Afterwards, I said: “I’ve eaten, you should quickly eat.”

At this moment, Satsuki’s initial happy face, quickly became gloomy: “Is that so? So that’s what happened, eating lunch with that beautiful sensei. So that’s what happened....”

“Satsuki?” Satsuki’s expression was very scary, I’ve never seen Satsuki this angry before.

“I’m really an idiot.” While speaking, Satsuki opened the lunchbox, and started eating as if her life depended on it.

“Hey, eat slower.”

Satsuki ignored me, and only focused on eating her bento. Furthermore, she didn’t take her favorite croquettes from my bento.

————— After school

Satsuki was very strange; she didn't talk to me for the whole day. Whenever I try to talk to her, she just ignores me. After school had ended, she quickly left by herself.

Did I do something wrong?

On my way back home, I kept thinking about what exactly did I do wrong.

Suddenly at this moment, I saw a few kids throwing stones at a gray dog.

That dog was cornered by them and it looked very frightened. However, it didn't dodge the stone that was thrown at it.

After being hit by the stones, it cried *Uu~~~~* a few times.

I ran over, raised my voice and said: "Hey, you guys, what are you doing?"

Maybe they thought that I was the owner of this dog, so they quickly ran away, and left this grey dog behind as it licked its own wounds.

I went over and that dog looked at me with its moist eyes. It looked extremely pitiful.

From my bag, I took out the bento that I didn't eat today, opened it, and placed it in front of the dog.

He looked at me a few times, sniffed it, and then started to nibble.

At this moment, I slightly sensed its magic power. This dog was a spirit, an earth attribute spirit.

I carefully inspected it. It's breed was closer to a wolf, had gray fur, and was of medium size. Its body was basically covered with wounds. I couldn't help but curse those bastards. Was it because it was just a common earth spirit? Did they have to treat it like that? Aren't earth spirits, spirits as well?

I sighed, and afterwards, watched it finish eating the bento.

Soon enough, it finished eating. After eating, it kept looking at me as I packed my bento box.

I stretched out my hand and patted its head. It seemed pretty tame since it didn't showed any signs of reluctance.

"Are you alone?" So I asked.

“Woof~~ woof” It laid down on the ground, and softly cried out.

What to do? If I just leave like this, even if it doesn't die of hunger, it'll still get stoned to death by those mischievous children.

“Do you want to come over to my place?” Was what I'm doing right now, considered to be a kidnapping?

I only saw it wag its tail as it barked: *Woof woof*.

It seems that its leg was injured. No wonder it didn't run away when it was cornered by those kids from before.

After I put the bento in my bag, I lifted the dog into my arms. During the exact moment I lifted it, that similar feeling of the transferring of power appeared again. From the looks of it, I was replenishing its magical power. However, that feeling disappeared almost instantly.

The injury on its leg started to heal and after 5 seconds, all the injuries on its body had disappeared.

Wasn't this too miraculous? The healing ability of spirits was just too alarming.

Now that I think about it, this was quite strange. It was an earth attribute spirit but earth attribute spirits have very strong defenses. How did it get injured just from the few stones thrown by those kids? It turned out that it's because it ran out of magic power. What did it go through? I didn't know, but what I did know was that if it's willing to follow me, then I'll take good care of it until it finds a master who would cherish it.

Since its injury was healed, I should put it back down.

It seems to be in joy after seeing its injury healed in seconds, and started to skip in front of me.

Just like that, it followed me home.

On the way back home, nobody noticed this extremely ordinary, lowest ranked spirit of the earth attribute. It walked beside me, but not once had it separated from me for more than half a step.

Soon enough, we reached home.

Upon opening the door, Silent Water came out to welcome me, and sweetly smiled at me: “Welcome back.”

“Ah, I’m back. Oh right, let me introduce to you.” While speaking, I pointed towards the earth dog as it came in.

“Little Water, I met it on the way home. It doesn’t have a home, or master so I decided to keep it here instead, until it finds a home. Can I?”

The earth dog, walked in, sat beside me, wagged its tail, and looked at Silent Water.

Silent Water gently said: “Master, this is your home, is there a need to have my consent? Besides, I can understand the feeling of not having a home and not having a family, so of course I’m very willing to have it stay here.”

Silent Water really was extremely kind and gentle.

“Ah, that’s really great Dusty; from now on, this will be your new home.” Dusty, that was the name I’ve decided to call it.

Dusty was very happy. It wagged its tail, turned in circles, brushed against my leg, and barked *woof woof* a few times towards Silent Water, to thank her.

————— Bathroom

“Come, sit properly, stop moving.” I made Dusty sit in the bathtub.

To be honest, Dusty was pretty swollen and in addition, its body was rather smelly. My body also contracted its smell, which was why I’m taking a bath together with it.

Dusty looked at me and then obediently sat inside the bathtub.

I picked up the showerhead and faced it towards its body to spray. It appeared to be a bit unadapted and slightly afraid. Yet, it still listened to me very well and actually didn’t move an inch. I squeezed shower gel onto its body and cleaned its fur. It seemed to understand the benefits of showering, as it ecstatically licking my face.

.....

After the shower, I took a towel to wipe its fur and then used a hair dryer to

blow dry it.

After being cleaned up, Dusty was no different than a regular house dog. As I sat on the sofa to watch TV, it curled up on my lap, and appeared to have fallen asleep.

At that moment, my cellphone rang. The incoming caller was Takahashi.

I answered the call and from the cellphone's speaker came Satsuki's urgent shouting: "Lin Xiang, no matter what, don't come, don't come no matter what, ah..." After that, Takahashi's ice-cold voice rang out from the cellphone's speaker: "Lin Xiang, 8 o'clock, the big ancient tree at Dark Forest Central."

"Hey, Takahashi, what going on?" I yelled at the phone.

Dammit, what happened to Satsuki?

"Come and you'll understand. If you don't, then you can think for yourself about what will happen." After that was said, the call was dropped.

I looked at the time on the clock. It was 7:50...

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 1 Chapter 9 – Takahashi, Demons, and Satsuki**

Dark Forest. About 1 kilometer north of Satsuki's house. It seems that demons inhabit that forest, so very few people go there.

By the time I reached Dark Forest Central, it was already 8:01.

Dammit, am I too late?

I desperately ran towards the ancient tree at the center of the Dark Forest,.

Truthfully speaking, the moment Takahashi hung up the phone, I desperately ran straight out. Originally, Silent Water and Dusty wanted to follow me, but I refused. Sure enough, the aura I felt from Takahashi today was indeed a demon. Since it's a demon, I couldn't let them go. I didn't want them to get hurt.

Arriving at the ancient tree, I discovered that Takahashi sat on top of a rock and Satsuki was tied to the ancient tree. Surrounding the ancient tree, was

drawings of strange runes, as if it was a preparation for some ceremony.

“You really came!” Takahashi looked at his phone: “Just on time, exactly 8:00.” The time showed on Takahashi’s phone was probably slower.

“What... do you... think... you’re doing?” I asked while panting.

“Ah, obviously it’s to attain strong power.” Takahashi’s usual handsome face, now looked to be as ugly as a demon.

“Why... Satsuki?”

“That’s obviously because she’s very suitable to be my power source.”

“Lin Xiang, just leave quickly. Don’t worry about me.” Satsuki shouted from the top of the tree.

“What does that mean?” By now, my strength have basically recovered.

“Simply put, my slave. After finishing the ceremony, she’ll obey me. As for me, I’ll have her go and seduce some capable people, after which, I’ll have them killed, and obtain their power.”

Relying on killing to increase their power? This is practically the same as demons.

“Why are you tell me all these?” Satsuki will become your slave? Don’t joke with me. Dammit, why did Takahashi became like this.

“To someone who’s about to die, why would I need to keep it a secret. I’ll let you die knowing everything. Did you know, Lin Xiang, at the beginning, I had wanted to court her, but she was too timid, so there’s no way for me to have a proper conversation with her. So, I wanted to take my time, and bit by bit, open her heart. But during this few days, you became close to Satsuki, and disrupted my plans. During the mock battles lesson, I increased the level of the demons. But to my surprise, you managed to avoid its attacks. Now, she’s able to chat with me normally. I realised, Satsuki had fallen for you, dammit. So I had no other choice but to do it the hard way.

The one who Satsuki likes is you! You bastard. Dammit, Takahashi, all this time, the way you treated me kindly, were all a lie? Dammit.

“Lin Xiang, to be able to become the sacrifice for this ceremony, you should

feel honored.” While speaking, he launched fire magic; a fireball at me.

I quickly dodged.

“I knew it. Lin Xiang, you’ve changed. Your speed has increased. However....” Just as Takahashi finished speaking, a burst of golden magic appeared behind me. No matter where I ran or what I did, I couldn’t shake it off. Awhile later, a bunch of silver swords came flying out of it.

Shit, so many swords. How am I supposed to dodge them all?

With a roll, I managed to dodge a wave of attack; then as he initiated the 2nd wave of attack, I took cover behind the tree.

*Ka-ca.* With a thud sound, the big tree fell to the ground.

That golden magic’s attack power was nothing to joke about.

“Lin Xiang.” Satsuki anxiously shouted from the side.

“Dammit.” Takahashi got a little angry since his attacks couldn’t land.

Soon after, a series of water, lightning, and fire magic came aiming for me but I still dodged all of it.

At this moment, Takahashi was running of patience as well: “Lin Xiang, you bastard, I dare you to stop hiding.”

“Takahashi, you bastard, I dare you to not use magic.” You idiot, when you’re using magic, how can I not hide. Do you think I’m stupid?

“Fine, Lin Xiang, I’ll take up your challenge.” Takahashi said as such, and stopped his magic attacks and ran towards me.

You bastard, I definitely won’t forgive you. I made a promise to nerdy Lin Xiang that I would protect Satsuki. Even if it’s you, as long as you hurt her, then I’ll defeat you with my own hands.

I came out of hiding, and ran at Takahashi.

Takahashi threw a straight punch at me. I blocked, and returned a punch back. His reaction speed was very fast as well; managed to dodge my punch, and followed it up with an elbow attack to my face.

As I dodge, I threw a punch to his stomach and it connected. He moved back

two steps while clutching his stomach.

“Takahashi, you bastard.” I raised my hands, with the intention of beating him down. Suddenly, Satsuki cried out: “Watch out.”

*Siii~~* A black sword suddenly pierced my abdomen from behind.

“Ah~~~” As I collapsed to the ground, I saw Takahashi laugh sinisterly: “ Well~ hahaha. Lin Xiang, you’re really stupid, did you actually think that I’d fight you barehanded?”

“Lin Xiang~~~” Satsuki desperately tried to break free from the rope but she was firmly tied.

“Bastard... the one Satsuki liked was you.... at first I intended to allow Satsuki to go out with you, but, as the way you are now, you’re not worthy of Satsuki.” I shouted loudly.

Damn, it hurts. Was this the strength of a demon? Was this guy possessed by a demon?

“Like me?” Takahashi looked at me with doubtful eyes and then laughed afterwards: “Hahaha, you worthless person, are you begging for mercy? But, such a shame. Since you know everything, you need to die now. After I get that power, I shall become a new generation of king, and only I, will be able to save this world that’s filled with demons.”

“Right now you’re a demon.” Satsuki was crying: “Lin Xiang, Lin Xiang... please be safe. Takahashi Nobuhiko, you asshole.”

“You slut, take the chance while you still can to yell all you want. Afterwards, you’ll be submitting to me.”

“Lin Xiang... Lin Xiang... listen. Leave me alone and run now while you still can. Listen Lin Xiang, I like you. These past few days, I realised, the one I like is you. Do you know why I fell for Takahashi? That’s because every time you’re in trouble, he’ll always help you.” Since I was in a lot of pain, I couldn’t clearly hear what Satsuki was saying: “Lin Xiang, leave quickly, even if I really turn into his puppet and lose my conscious, please remember. I, Satsuki Risa, really like... Lin Xiang....”

Dammit Satsuki, what’re you trying to say? I can’t hear any of it. But can your

expression not look so sad?

“Okay, Lin Xiang. Now, with you as the sacrifice, I’ll start the ceremony. In your final dying moments, you’ll be able to witness Satsuki become my puppet.” Takahashi turned around and a big black magic array appeared, immediately followed by Satsuki’s screams of suffering. Awhile later, the screams stopped. From the looks of it, she must have fainted.

Dammit, am I really going to just die like this? It’s only just a little stab.

I used all my strength to move my left hand to my wound. Looks like it’s a serious injury. Dammit.

“Woof~~~” Dusty’s voice rang in my ear.

Dusty?

“Master, master are you alright?” Silent Water hurriedly ran to me and used water magic to heal me.

“Spirits?” At this moment, Takahashi had noticed Silent Water and immediately afterwards, as if he had gotten mad: “Human form spirits? Is this real? This... this... isn’t she too beautiful?”

Silent Water fiercely glared at the person who did this to me. Afterwards, she applied a mass of water onto my abdomen and stood up.

Ah~~~ it’s blue.

Today, Silent Water’s dress was blue. Coincidentally, my head was right under her dress.

Seriously, what’s wrong with me? In this crucial moment, I still was in the mood to look at Silent Water’s underwear?

“The one who harmed master, must not be forgiven.” Silent Water’s voice was filled with anger.

This is my first time seeing the angry side of Silent Water.

“Oh? Oh? Oh? Angry? The human spirit is angry? Ha ha, this is fun. Hey babe, do you want to follow me? Together we can save this world?” Takahashi crazily said.

“I’ve nothing to say to the one who hurt my master.” As she said this, she released streams of high pressure water jets, each with speed of a firing laser gun.

Takahashi easily dodged them and watched as those water jet streams pierced through seven or eight big trees. Takahashi seemed pleased: “Oh~~~ really impressive. I want you more and more as my spirit now. What else are you capable of? Bring them out, enlighten me.”

After Silent Water missed the water jets, she immediately switched to a stronger magic: Watersprout.

“Little Silent. You can’t, the current you can’t use such a strong magic.”

This isn’t the demon world, Silent Water. You can’t use too much magic.

As if Silent Water hadn’t heard me, two huge tornados rapidly went to attack Takahashi.

Watersprout has quite an immense power. Moreover, when flanked from both sides, Takahashi wasn’t able to escape and was hit straight on.

“Satsuki.” At this moment, I was very worried about Satsuki.

“Woof!” Dusty dragged Satsuki out.

“Satsuki.” Seeing that Satsuki was fine, I felt relieved.

“Satsuki, are you alright?” I shook the unconscious Satsuki but there was no response.

Even though it’s water magic, that strong attack still inevitably led to lots of dust.

“Not bad.” Suddenly, Takahashi’s voice came from within the dust: “I really like you.” Takahashi’s voice quieted down and the dust was blown away in a short time. In the middle of the dust, was a floating Takahashi who was surrounded by black smoke.

The bastard had already changed into a demon. Dammit.

When Silent Water, who used that excessive amount of magic, saw that Takahashi was completely fine, she was taken aback. Once again, she attacked

using high pressured water jets. At this moment, Takahashi, who had his eyes shut, opened his eyes, and black lightning fired at Silent Water.

“Ah~~~~” Silent Water instantly fell to the ground. Her body still had some black electrostatic that went *zhi zhi*.

“Woof.” Dusty, who saw Silent Water collapse, was angry as well. It ran straight towards Takahashi but before it could even get close to him, it was hit by a black lightning and flew more than 10 metres away.

“Little Silent! ? Dusty ! ?” As I saw Silent Water and Dusty collapse to the ground with many injuries, I got mad.

‘Brat, think carefully. This will burn your soul.’ Suddenly, Freed’s voice rang through my ears.

‘Uh, I know. So what if my soul is burned? As long as I can protect those I wish to protect, even if It leads to death, I wouldn’t mind it at all.’

‘Since this is the case, you can rest assured and do it. Since we’ve already died once, will there be anything that we dare to not do?’

‘Ah~~ that’s right.’ I stood up, and fearlessly laughed.

“What are you laughing about?” Takahashi asked.

“Hey~ Takahashi. In the past, whenever I encountered a difficult situation, why did you helped me?” I asked.

“Ha?”

“Takahashi, I’ve always thought of you as my best friend.”

“Don’t be stupid, stupid. That’s because you’re really weak and if I’m next you, I would look stronger, that’s all.” Takahashi indifferently answered. He seems certain of winning.

“No~~~ Takahashi, it’s because you’re possessed by a demon. The Takahashi I know, is someone who’s kind, handsome, and popular with the girls.” I laughed: “We’re friends. Those so-called friends, don’t they put their friend back onto the right path if they step onto the wrong one?”

“You talk too much.” When he finished speaking, a big lightning bolt shot

down from the sky.

“How’s this possible?” Takahashi was shocked when he saw me absorbed the lightning.

“Thanks for the hospitality, Takahashi, you’ve helped me once again.” What I meant by help, was of course referring to him giving me power, and reducing the burning of my soul.

White flames ignited from my hands.

“What? You know how to use magic? What’s that magic? What’s this oppressive feeling?” Takahashi instinctively felt fear, and stepped back a few steps.

“This time, it’s my turn to help you.” I said, then quickly ran towards the Takahashi who was planning to escape.

Then, with a straight punch, I hit Takahashi.

Takahashi caught hold of my fist, but since it was covered with sacred fire, it instantly ignited his entire body.

“WAAAAH!!!!!! WAAAAH!!!!!!” Takahashi’s painful screams echoed throughout the deep forest.

Suddenly, I saw a black smoke drift out from Takahashi’s body. It wanted to leave Takahashi’s body, but once it came out, it was spread over by the sacred fire and disappeared in less than a second.

Following the disappearance of the demon, the sacred fire on Takahashi’s body extinguished as well.

Takahashi was panting heavily at first, then he comfortably laid down on the ground: “Xiang~ Thank you.”

“Everything’s fine now?”

“Yeah, It’s fine now.”

“How did you know I was possessed by a demon?”

“Just a feeling”

“Ah~~ is that so.” Takahashi handsomely smiled like he always do: “Being

possessed by a demon, was really such a scary thing.”

“Since when did it happened?”

“Two months ago, when we just started high school.”

“Why?”

“Not sure, it probably because I wanted to become stronger.” Takahashi sighed: “My brother, at his 2nd day of starting high school, was killed by a demon.”

So that was what happened. No wonder nerdy Lin Xiang had a feeling that ever since school started, Takahashi had changed.

“I wanted to become strong, strong enough to kill demons, but in the end, I didn’t expect that I would actually be possessed by a demon instead. That’s so ironic.”

“Does your family know?”

“Of course they knew. But they couldn’t do anything, furthermore, since my clan is famous. Since this sort of thing happened, it would disgrace my clan, so they decided to kick me out of the clan.”

“Is that so? So this was the reason you had to work.” I understood everything: “In that case, what’s your plan now?”

“I want to become stronger. I want to kill those hateful demons. Now that the demon possessing my body had been purged by you, I’m going back home to visit my old man and do closed-door training.” As he said that, Takahashi stood up and looked at me with a serious face: “Xiang, thank you. Even though I don’t know what magic you used to purge the demon in my body, I still must thank you.”

“Humanoid spirit. Didn’t expect they actually exist.” Takahashi exclaimed as he looked Silent Water, who was still lying on the grass.

“Sorry, but I won’t let you touch a single hair on her body.”

“Of course I won’t. Xiang~~ I don’t have the qualifications. Furthermore, she has already found her master.”

“What do you mean?”

“Nothing, don’t worry. This matter regarding the humanoid spirit, I’ll keep it a secret for you. But I have a condition.”

“What condition?” Has the demon really been purged?

“My condition is very simple, that is: Lin Xiang. You must take good care of Satsuki.” Takahashi seriously said.

“Even if you didn’t tell me this, I still plan on doing so.”

“Is that so. After listening to your words, I feel assured now.”

“Nobuhiko.” Now I finally felt that he was the real Takahashi Nobuhiko: “Satsuki, that girl, really likes you.”

“Oh? Is that so?” Takahashi with a half-smile, looked at me: “Perhaps so. However, it seems that she likes an incredibly stupid guy more instead.”

“Who?”

“Don’t know.” Takahashi you bastard, why did you leave me hanging. Who’s that incredibly stupid guy?

Takahashi’s turned his back to face me and dragged his tired body forward a few steps. Before stopping he said: “Xiang~~~ being able to have a friend like you is really great. Remember, you need to live well, aim towards the title of the strongest, and advance.”

“Same goes for you.” From the looks for it, it’s going to be difficult for me to see Takahashi in the future.

In the previous world, Takahashi was with me for four years. In this world, Takahashi was with nerdy Lin Xiang for four years as well. A total of eight years.

And now, I have to separate with a friend that I’ve been with for eight years. This feeling wasn’t exactly pleasant. However, even if he didn’t want to leave, he shouldn’t want to see Satsuki anymore? After all the things he did to her.

Satsuki? Speaking of Satsuki, I quickly ran to Satsuki’s side and shook her, only to see that there was no reaction. However, her body condition seemed to be normal, so she probably had only fainted.

I carried her on my back. With Silent Water and Dusty together beside me, we continued to walk until we arrived at Satsuki's home.

After putting Satsuki down on her bed, I realised Silent Water's face was very pale. Probably should be a severe loss of magic power.

Without saying anything, I pulled her into my arms.

"Master....." Silent Water cried out, flabbergasted.

At this moment, I could feel the transferring of magic power. A total of 15 seconds had passed.

Truly worthy of the title of King class spirits. The magic replenishment took so long, whereas Dusty only needed a second.

Embracing Silent Water in my arms for 15 seconds, didn't feel that bad.

"Little Silent." I looked at Silent Water's blushing face and said with a serious tone: "Next time, you're not allowed to be this reckless again, understand?"

"Mn." Silent Water nodded her head.

-----

"In that case, you guys head back first." To not let Satsuki discover a rare humanoid spirit, Silent Water, I've decided to let her head home first.

"Okay."

"Remember to walk in places without any people. Be careful." At first, I planned to bring them back home myself, but the thoughtful Silent Water refused. She wanted me to remain here and take care of Satsuki.

Since Dusty knew the way home, then I can rest assure that they'll return home.

"Well then, master, goodbye."

"Woof woof~~~"

After saying their goodbyes, they left for home.

I watched them until their shadow disappeared around the corner of the street.

Returning back to Satsuki's room, Satsuki still had not woken up. At this moment, I walked passed a mirror and noticed how embarrassing I looked.

My face was cover with dust, and my chest was covered with bloodstains.

Bloodstains? Speaking of which, I remembered I was injured.

I quickly took off my shirt to look, and discovered what was supposed to be a hole in my abdomen, was completely fine. Not even a trace of injury.

"Wasn't this too incredible?" I think it must have been Silent Water's magic that saved me.

I went to Satsuki's bathroom to wash my face, wiped away the dust on my body, and returned to sit beside Satsuki.

A wave of tiredness struck me, and without realizing it, I fell asleep.

.....

"Not bad, brat. To save your friend." The white dragon Freed praised me.

"This was all possible because of you guys."

"Of course, of course." The black dragon Yalide confidently laughed.

"Damn you Yalide. Can't you be like me and have some modesty?" White Dragon Freed scolded.

"Modesty? I think hypocritical fits you more."

"What? You picking a fight?"

"Fight? Bring it on. Who's afraid of who?" As they spoke, they started to fight again like last time.

I really didn't get why these two like to fight so much.

.....

Hm? So warm, this feeling is?

Just as I opened my eyes, I discovered that I was laying down on Satsuki's bed. My jacket was missing and Satsuki was hugging me like an octopus. I looked at the ticking clock that was hanging on the wall. It showed that it was 6:30 in the morning.

“Hey? You’re awake?”

Satsuki opened her hazy eyes. Once she caught sight of me, she appeared to be extremely happy; her beautiful face was just a few inches away from mine.

Seeing Satsuki at close range, I couldn’t help but say that she really was awfully beautiful; faced with such unblemished skin, curly eyelashes and big eyes that flickered with captivating radiance, my heartbeat couldn’t help but start to accelerate.

“Idiot, you’re too close.” I reminded her in this way.

At that moment, Satsuki realized that she really was too close. She immediately let go of me. Her face became red and then she sat down on the chair that I sat on yesterday.

“It’s good that you’re awake.”

“Mn.”

“What about Takahashi?” Satsuki asked.

“He’s already fine.”

“Oh.” Satsuki only replied with a single word and then looked at me with infatuation.

“You’re not curious about what happened?”

“It doesn’t matter, I don’t want to know. After all, it’s fine as long as some idiot is alright.” She looked at my intact belly.

“What’s that supposed to mean.”

“Nothing~~~” Satsuki wrinkled her nose adorably, and then said: “Come, let’s eat breakfast. We’ll go to school in a bit.”

“Oh.” I nodded my head.

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 1 Chapter 9.5 – Silent Water Short Story**

“Hello!” When I was staring blankly at the small stream, he ran in front of me

and greeted me.

I won't be able to forget this scene for a very long time. He was the one who eliminated the demon who killed my father and mother. He was the one who, at the time when my magic power was depleted, gave me his incomparably strong magic power. It was he, who gave me a home where I could settle down.

.....

My parents and I originally lived in the Demon World. Our family of three lived very happily. One Sunday (a week) ago, that diabolic demon —- spirit hunter Genuoduolasu, appeared before us.

My father, who was omnipotent in my eyes, was easily injured. Afterwards, in order to give my mother and I time to escape, he sacrificed himself.

At the time we arrived at the border of the Human World and Demon World, due to the excessive fatigue of opening a crack in space, my mother was overtaken and murdered by it. All that remained was me, who was all alone. When I was staring blankly at the small stream, he ran in front of me and greeted me.

Just when I wanted to respond to him, it appeared. The fear it gave me was really too much; I felt my two legs tremble, as if I couldn't walk anymore. He, without saying anything, dragged me and ran. Right when we ran to the place called a "factory", he was hit by its flame. I could only look on helplessly and watch his soul energy gradually become weaker as it was burned by the flames.

However, in less than 2 seconds, his soul energy returned. What was even more unimaginable was that later, he unexpectedly extinguished its flames. You know, the flames of fire attribute demons can't stop burning, so how could it be extinguished by a human? This also wasn't even the thing that amazed me the most. What amazed me the most was that he clearly had time to flee, but he nevertheless stayed in front of me and helped me ward off its flames. Furthermore, he ultimately also killed Genuoduolasu...

If it were before and my father asked me: is a regular human capable of defeating a superior demon? I would say no, but looking at him, with his weak spiritual energy, truly defeat the demon who killed my parents and moreover, only needing one move — a white flame; a move that gave me a sense of

familiarity from the heart and also shock...

In the moment that he embraced me, his incomparably strong magic power poured into my body. I've never felt such powerful magic power before. It was completely inconsistent with the spiritual power that was emitted from his body; it was so strong and irresistible...

After arriving at his house, he cooked something called Plain Noodle Soup for me to eat. It was the first time I ate such incomparably delicious food. The soup tasted completely better than the "Almis Sweet Spring Water" that the water spirits in the Demon World regarded as a treasure...

Mother said to me before, that male humans are extremely fond of females who grow up beautifully; those male humans always wish to take advantage of females. If, in the future, I had to choose my own master, I must consider the opposite member's manner of speech and conduct. He told me to bathe, I originally believed that he wished to bathe together with me and was somewhat uncomfortable. However, I had completely not expected that I was the one who one-sidedly misunderstood his intentions; he was an honest person...

When I finished bathing, he had come back with the clothes he bought for me. He switched on a box that was called a Television and watched it for awhile before heading to the second floor. Suddenly, I felt a powerful magic. From the floor above me, I started hearing lots of crashing noise. Awhile later, that magic vanished: I ran upstairs to check and found that his room was like the trees in "Ilila" jungle that randomly grew and intertwined with the other trees. A complete mess. I asked him what happened here, and he told me he was careless and tripped. Suddenly, I have a feeling of respect towards him. With just a fall, he was able to produce this much destructive power, it made me look at him suspiciously, having doubts about him being human....

Evening.

There was still one more thing that Mother said, and that was that all male humans like to "sleep" with females. "Sleeping", this sort of thing, I knew about it. Mother had told me about it before, since human spirits are a very rare species, my generation needs to make contact with humans, and form contracts with them to ensure the continuation of the next generation..... So I wanted to

confirm that he was an upright man. When it was time to sleep, he brought me to his room and I jumped onto his bed, hugged a very soft object (pillow), and closed my eyes to see if he'll do anything. In the end, he did something. He poured a glass of water and placed it beside me. Afterwards, he gently covered me with a blanket and left the room.....

### First Day:

Not sure why but after waking up, I felt uncomfortable when I didn't see him. However, there wasn't any reason for me to run to his room and look for him, so I went downstairs and tried to imitate his cooking from yesterday... After he woke up, he ate my cooking and felt very happy. He even praised me. I'm not sure why but this made me very happy.

He had left for school. In this empty house, I don't know what to do so I helped him clean the house. His house was very dirty (This is a misunderstanding, in actual fact, Lin Xiang is someone who loves to be neat and tidy. It's just that he didn't have the time to clean his house.) After spending a long time cleaning the house, I started doing the laundry. While holding his clothes, I became slightly dazed as I looked at it. Afterwards, I could not help but do some unbelievable things. I started sniffing his clothes.... After sniffing, I quickly put down his clothes. It's not that his clothes were smelly, it was just that his smell was making my body hot. After I washed his clothes, I drew the water out from it, and just like this the clothes became dry.....

By the time I was done with this, it was already noon. I warmed the food he cooked for me and ate it. After eating, I switched on the box that's called Television and looked at the pictures inside. But I still felt that time passed by really slowly.....

In the evening, he came back. After seeing me wear the clothes he bought for me yesterday, he blankly looked at me. It made me feel embarrassed as my whole body started to feel warm. Afterwards, he said I was beautiful. This caused the water in my initial warm body to feel like it's evaporating. I only felt my head was getting dizzy so I quickly hid in the room beside me.

After some time, my breathing stabilized and that's when I discovered that I was actually hiding in the bathroom. This is somewhat embarrassing. I sneakily came

to the kitchen and the him that's currently cooking saw me and gave me a smile that's as warm as sunshine. He asked me to come into the kitchen, and taught me how to cook.....

After cooking, he asked about my situation today. I told him what I did today, but, the thing about his clothes... was obviously left out. I really can't bring myself to speak about it. After hearing my narrative, it seems that he was able to understand my boredom today so he took out his magic hands and patted my head. Not sure why, but I really like it when he touches me. His touch makes me feel so warm, makes me forget about the pain of losing my parents....

After eating, I watched some television programs with him. Not sure whether it was because of the television programs or not, I kept feeling that the show was very enjoyable, and the time passed really fast. In a short while, it was already time to sleep....

Second Day:

After waking up in the morning, I secretly went to his room to see him. At that time, he was sleeping so soundly.

After he ate the breakfast I made, it was time to separate from him again. Going to school and all, is it really that fun? Afterwards for the whole day, I watched the television show that's related to school. There was an anime show on, where the main character was mostly in school. I gradually understood the usefulness of a school, and why students went to school.....

At night, he's back. There's an injury on his face and he told me was wrestling. As I was reducing his swelling with my water magic, I was praying too; hoping that no one was hurt when he fell. I really hope that he didn't hurt anyone, since the television said if he hurt someone, he'll be going to a place called prison. (In fact, there was 8 person who was injured due to Lin Xiang's "Fall".)

Day Three:

Today, it was already way past the time that he should be back. The sky was slowly getting dark as well. He's still not back yet, so I worriedly stood in front of the door and waited for him, praying that nothing happened to him. I didn't know how long I stood there but finally, I saw him at the mirror of the junction... Even though I didn't know what happened to him, but as long as he's fine, it's

more important than any other things.

Day Four:

Since I used some magic power when I was doing the housework, I used quite a lot of magic power, so I woke up later today. Also, my complexion wasn't too good today and my hair was a mess. In order to let him eat breakfast earlier, I didn't have time to take care of it. Coming to the kitchen, I saw that he was currently cooking something; I rubbed my eyes and realised that he really was here. Only until he greeted me, did I realise my hair was in a mess. I quickly ran towards the bathroom.....

I asked why was he up so early and he actually told me it was an apology for making me wait yesterday night. Actually, this wasn't really needed? Just as I was lost in my thoughts, he suddenly embraced me and my mind went blank. Afterwards, I felt his strong magic power....

In the afternoon, he came back home while bringing an Earth Element dog spirit.

This is his house, and he even asked for my opinion. Asking whether he can keep that Earth spirit at home, is this his way of accepting me? Then when will he engrave the magic mark on me? (Simply put, it means forming a contract. A contract is made by kissing the contracted spirit. Afterwards, a certain spot on the spirit's body will have an exclusive marking of its master.)

He answered a call and ran out, looking very anxious. From the anxious looks he had, something must have happened. Dusty and I wanted to follow him but he wouldn't allow it. He had a very serious look. Usually, he would have an impatience look but I know his heart was filled with patience. However, I've never seen him have such a serious look. This made me realise that something must have happened.

I needed to abide to his order, so I can't follow him, but I can't let him get hurt, so I must follow him. While in a dilemma, I wasted about twenty something minutes before deciding with Dusty to look for him. Luckily, Dusty was a dog spirit, so it can sniff the air and know which direction he went in....

By the time we reached there, he was already injured. Looking at the him who had collapsed onto the ground, my heart felt it was fiercely pulled by something.

Looking at the guy in front who had changed into a demon and listening to his possessive words, my mind didn't seem to be able to think of anything. I am very angry....

By the time I recovered, that demon guy was already gone. I struggled as I dragged my body to the house of the girl on his back. After he put that girl down on her bed, without saying a word, he pulled me into his arms and that strong magic power flowed into me once again. It felt like only a moment had passed, until he let go of me. At this moment, my magic power had fully recovered. Furthermore, I even felt that my ability had increased. If he gives me his magic power every time, my magic power will probably increase....

Today.

“Alright, Silent Water, I'm going to school.” He heartily lifted up his schoolbag and said that to me with a smile, breaking off my train of thought.

“Okay, please be careful on the road.” Eight days have already passed by. Faced with the affable and approachable him, I honestly don't know what I should say. I just felt that meeting him was truly wonderful.

He gave me so much, but I had nothing to give back, so I can only sweep the floor, prepare meals, wash the clothes and so on; repaying him by doing the things that I'm capable of accomplishing. Undoubtedly, the things I'm doing are so little and not equal to 0.0001% of what he has done for me; however, they are nevertheless capable of making him extremely happy.

He, is my master, and his name is Lin Xiang.

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 2 Chapter 1 – Nora Grass, the Beautiful Satsuki, and Kamiki Kuji**

Two weeks have already passed since the incident with Takahashi. In these two weeks, there was an increase in events happening around the world. For example, in a certain country, its spirit control system malfunctioned, which causes spirits energy to leak out, and attracted many wild spirits. Wild spirits can cause huge damage to countries. Furthermore, during that incident, quite a

handful of people died as well.

The news report stated: This incident has once again given humanity a wake up call. Everyone, please do not be accustomed to the spirits we see everyday. In fact, all these spirits were once very aggressive; the only difference is that they have been domesticated. So everyone, try to make less contact with wild spirits when you're outside. If you come across a wild spirit while you're on a holiday, please escape immediately. If you need a spirit, please go to your local spirit shop to purchase your own spirit.

Spirits, are separated into five different levels: lowest class, low class, middle class, high class, and special class. Humans do not know that king class spirits actually exist — and one of such spirit was currently sitting beside me and watching the news, Silent Water. Silent Water was a well-behaved spirit. She'll always help me keep the house clean, cook meals for me. Even though she also grew up in the demon world, it's really hard for me to picture Silent Water as one of those cold-blooded wild spirits. It should be due to her being a king class spirit?

I petted Dusty who was resting on my lap. Dusty should be considered a wild spirit as well? But why wasn't it aggressive? Was it because it belonged to the lowest class of earth element spirits? That can't be right, there's something fishy with this news. I think what happened was that the residents saw many rare and strong spirits, so they wanted to capture them, and the spirits retaliated, which was why the humans had been killed? After all, the majority of spirits don't enjoy fighting. As long as you do not bother them, they would not harm you. Aren't humans too opinionated? Aren't spirits living beings as well? Were they destined to be your slaves? Go to hell. Spirits are our friends, they help us in fighting against demons. They're not just our slaves.

I cursed silently in my heart. However, I had a feeling that out of 10 people, at most 3 would agree with me. Many people would have the assumption that spirits were born for the purpose of being humanity's slave, and take the humans' place in doing dangerous things. For example, the earth and water element spirits were the most commonly seen, and as such, were labelled as construction workers. They could easily be bought for around 10 dollars in spirit shops. As for rarer gold spirits, you wouldn't be able to buy them without paying

a several hundreds of thousands.

I took a good look at Silent Water but couldn't help think to myself, how much money would Silent Water be worth?

No no no, I immediately broke my train of thought. Silent Water is priceless. Nobody can buy her, unless it's the one she had chosen to be her master, or else no matter who it was, I wouldn't let them touch her. Not even a strand of hair. Until she finds a master who she deemed to be worthy, she would stay as my family member.

While thinking of this, I couldn't help but reach out to touch Silent Water's supple dark blue hair. As I rubbed her head, Silent Water turned around to take a look at me, and smiled. Silent Water had a beautiful smile with pearly white teeth and vividly enchanting eyes. This made me want to protect her and her beautiful smile.

Suddenly, my cell phone rang. It was Satsuki calling: "Hello, Satsuki-chan, do you need something?"

"I can't call you unless I need something?" From the phone came Satsuki's displeased voice.

"Of course not, calling me is good, so please give me lots of calls even if you don't need anything."

"Humph~ smart. What are you doing?"

"Me? Watching television, why?"

"Watching television? The only thing you've been doing these two days during the weekend was watching television?"

"Not really, I also went online."

"...Don't tell me that you stayed inside these two days for such silly things?"

"What do I need to go out for?"

"You... You could've come and find me..."

"Uh...." I was lost for words for a moment. Ever since the incident with Takahashi, I clearly felt that I'm closer to Satsuki, but I still couldn't understand

Satsuki's weird behaviour at times.

From the beginning when she didn't want me to drink her drinks, it changed into snatching my drink away to drink, while saying something like the drink I gave her wasn't nice so she wanted to drink mine. When returning home, she always insisted that I must stay at her house for awhile before I could leave. After eating, she purposely made her mouth oily and passes me a tissue, insisting that I help clean her mouth.....

Doesn't she know that the majority of the guys in class want to get rid of me? If it was in the past, they would still hesitate because of Takahashi, but now Takahashi had left. Speaking of which, was Takahashi doing well? Excluding me and Satsuki who knew what happened, many of the girls in class were really saddened by the news of Takahashi leaving.

"Hey, why aren't you saying anything? Will you lose face if you asked me out? I want to buy clothes today, so I need someone to help me carry the stuff and at the same time, give me his opinion on the clothes."

"Oh. What time are we going out then?" I looked at the clocked, it was 1:54

"2:30, wait in front of Phoebe Park, understand?"

"Oh, I understand. In that case...." *Beep,beep,beep,beep* From the phone came a busy tone. She had hung up.

What a really strange girl. I sighed and told Silent Water: "Little Silent, I'm going out for awhile soon, is there anything you want me to buy for you?" Truthfully speaking, I really want to bring Silent Water out for shopping, but she was a king class human spirit. If I bring her out, it would definitely cause a big uproar.

"Thank you Master, but I don't need anything."

"Little Silent, I'm sorry, I really want to bring you outside, but..." Even though Silent Water's expression was calm, I could still feel some loneliness in her. After all, she can only move around in my house....

"It's fine, master, Silent Water understands her own circumstance. Master giving me shelter is more than enough, I really have no other request."

“Ah~~ Little Silent, you really are obedient.” I rubbed Silent Water’s head and went upstairs to change clothes.

I chose a set of casual clothes and started putting them on. Suddenly....

‘Actually, there’s a way for that water spirit to hide her spirit aura.’ White Dragon Freed’s voice suddenly sounded in my head.

“Shit! You scared me. What? Just now you said there’s a way for Silent Water to hide her spirit aura? Really? What’s the method?” If there’s really a way to hide Silent Water’s spirit aura, of course I’ll be excited.

‘Look at yourself, being so excited, you only need to find the Nora Grass. This type of grass can prevent spirits from emitting their spirit aura. All Silent Water need to do is to put the Nora Grass on her body, and others won’t be able to detect her spirit aura. With this, humans will think that she’s just an ordinary human who’s a bit pretty.’

‘I bet this kind of grass is hard to find.’ In general, this sort of grass in games would be hidden, and was very difficult to obtain.

‘It’s not, this sort of grass can be found everywhere in the demon world.’

‘Nani? Is that true? This sort of grass is obviously very powerful. It can even hide spirit’s aura.’

‘.....’ Freed was silent for awhile, before saying: ‘Not all humans are like you, okay? Who would hide their own spirit’s spiritual aura? Rather, they would want their spirit’s spiritual aura to be very strong.’

‘Oh, you’re right. Then how do I go to the Demon world?’

‘Just leave this matter to me. Don’t forget that I’m the guardian of the underworld....’ Suddenly, Black Dragon Yalide’s voice came. Next, Freed said a sentence that made Yalide embarrassed: ‘Oh, you have the nerve to talk about it?’

‘Don’t talk about what happened in the past, damnit Freed. Well well~~ Brat, ignore Freed, you only need to remember, that I’m a qualified guardian. In that case, when do you want to go?’

‘Right now.’ Honestly, I almost forgot this Yalide bastard was the underworld’s

(Demon world) guardian.

‘Brat, did you forget something?’ Freed reminded.

‘Something? Nope, are you asking me to prepare my equipments?’

‘You forgot about your date with that human girl?’

‘Date? OH! Due to a moment of happiness, I nearly forgot about Satsuki. In that case, wait till I come back before we go to the demon world.’

‘You brat, is pretty talented. How are you going to protect others when you actually forgot about your date with a girl?’

‘I... it’s because being able to bring Silent Water outside made me so overjoyed that I forgot about it.’

‘Humph~~ You don’t need to explain yourself. It’s already 2:30, is it fine to not leave now?’

‘Right right right, I’ll leave right now.’

After bidding farewell to Silent Water, I wanted to drive to Phoebe Park but was stopped by Freed. I asked for his reason but he scolded me as a fool, a moron that doesn’t know how to take care of a woman’s heart.

Even though I don’t understand what he meant, I better follow his instructions. After putting the new bike back home, I ran towards Phoebe Park.

By the time I ran to the park, it was already 2:35. Satsuki was already there waiting for me; her face showed a smile when she saw me but immediately frowned: “Oi ! Bastard Lin Xiang, how can you be like this? Is there anyone who’s on a date... shopping, that would make the girl wait?”

“I’m really sorry, just now I saw a mouse chasing a cat.”

“ ? ” Satsuki’s expression changed into a confused one: “A cat chasing a mouse, why were you looking at them?”

“What I said was a mouse chasing a cat.”

“What? Eh? ..... You said a mouse was chasing a cat? Why would there be such a strange thing?”

“I know right, that’s why I stopped to look at them.”

“Really?” Satsuki nodded her head.

I can't believe it, she actually believed such a lame excuse... I secretly wiped the sweat from my head.

Satsuki stopped questioning my reason for being late, and spun around in front of me.

“What are you doing?” I was curious about Satsuki's action.

“What do you think?”

“What do I think?” What's she referring to?

“I'm asking you, what do you think if you just go and die?” Satsuki hit me, then left without turning back.

“Hey hey hey, what is it? Why are you angry?” I chased after her.

I'm not angry, I was just curious why idiots won't go extinct. I'm going back now.” Hearing her tone of voice, how can it possibly resemble her not being angry?

“No no no, dear Risa-sama, please tell me what happened.” I grabbed hold of her elbow.

Satsuki was clearly taken aback by my actions. She struggled for a few moments before giving up and turned around to say: “Today, I'm wearing a white skirt.”

I looked at Satsuki, oh right, white skirt. When I first arrived, I already noticed Satsuki was dressed up, a white short-sleeved T-shirt, and a white skirt. In this slightly hot afternoon, it's particularly refreshing. Her T-shirt was slightly tight, which completely displayed her curvaceous body. When I was running here, there were quite a few guys secretly looking at Satsuki. But so what? Unless she wants me to compliment her?

“Oh right, full white, appears to be very pure, very nice.”

“Is... is that so?” Satsuki's face was suddenly red, as if she wasn't angry just now. I really can't figure her out.

“That's right, today's Satsuki is very beautiful.” So she really just wanted me to

compliment her?

“Idiot.... move. Let’s go buy clothes.” Satsuki shyly said.

Satsuki stopped in front of a woman’s fashion clothing store and pulled me inside.

After Satsuki dragged me in, my heart beat started pounding quickly and cold sweat kept dripping down. It’s not because of the number of girls in the store, but it was because this was the store where I bought Silent Water her clothes. This place, will forever haunt me ah~~~ even though the people present at that time may have forgotten me, but.... at that time, the look they gave me, those looks they gave to a pervert, will forever be etched in my heart. That mental attack had damaged me pretty badly.

“Hey ? What are you doing? Why are you sweating so much?” As she was choosing her clothes, she turned around and asked me.

“Recently, the weather is pretty hot, you know it’s June. Summer’s here.”

“Isn’t it air-conditioned here? Why is it still hot? In fact I feel a little cold instead.”

“Didn’t we just enter? Furthermore, I ran here just now.”

“Oh.” Towards the me who was wryly smiling, Satsuki nodded her head.

As long as I keep this pain hidden in my heart, no one will know about it, those “it’s none of my business” girls had already forgotten me. Since they had forgotten about me, why should I worry about it?

At this moment, a woman pushed open the door and came in. I was stunned stupid: There was one more person, and she knows about it. My class monitor, Kamiki Kuji.

“Isn’t this Satsuki-san?” Kamiki Kuji noticed me the moment she came in but she didn’t look at me and only greeted Satsuki.

“Oh ? it’s Kamiki-san, hello.” Satsuki heard someone call her so she turned around and replied after seeing Kamiki Kuji.

Kamiki Kuji faced Satsuki and lightly smiled: “Is Satsuki-san alone?”

Doesn't this girl see me standing beside Satsuki? Why did she say this on purpose? From her body, I can feel a resentful atmosphere.

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 2 Chapter 2 – Blockhead, Dragon's ability, and Satsuki's mom**

"I" (Nerdy Lin Xiang) had a feeling that Kamiki hated me, but "I" assumed that she only hated me for dragging the class rank down.

But now, after experiencing that kind of hostile aura from her for myself, and the disgust she had when "I" talked to her a few times, I understood that what she hated wasn't me, but some other reason that I don't know about.

Even though she didn't really have this sort of attitude towards all of the other guys, her terrible attitude towards me was obvious.

I carefully recalled whether "I" had offended her somehow before, but after thinking for a while, I couldn't think of any. Though, I couldn't say that I've had no interaction with her whatsoever. Aside for Satsuki and Takahashi, the only one who "I"ve talked to the most was Yamada Yukihiro....

"Me? I came here with Lin Xiang." Satsuki was curious as to why she asked this, so she replied after looking at me.

Strangely, Kamiki Kuji smiled. Suddenly, she shot a glance at me and held it for a second, making me hold my breath.

Being another one of the popular girls at my school, Kamiki's looks weren't inferior to Satsuki's. Furthermore, she had a noble aura that Satsuki didn't have, that added to her character. While her eyes and looks may not be as great as Satsuki's, Kamiki was wise, sharp, and had an ability to see through a person's heart at a single glance. She makes me feel intangibly pressured.

It seemed as if a heavy weight had been lifted off of Kamiki's chest. Sure enough, she heaved a sigh of relief: "Is that so? Actually, Lin Xiang-san isn't that bad. In that case, you guys please take your time. I think I still have something else I need to do, so I'm leaving first."

After seeing Kamiki's figure open the door and leave, I felt happy. I'm not sure

what happened but I do know that was my first time seeing Kamiki smile....

“Lin Xiang !! What she said just now.... Yuki mistake Italy her.” Satsuki, with a reddened face, stuttered like she’s speaking some unknown Japanese dialect.

Yuki, Italy, mistake = you better, misunderstand, not?

“What Kamiki said just now, was there a special meaning behind it?” What Kamiki said just now, was it related to why she was so happy? If I don’t understand something, I must ask about it. This has always been my way of life.

After listening to what I said, Satsuki’s somewhat excited expression had calmed down. She nagged in a low voice: “That’s right.... a blockhead will forever be a blockhead....”

(The previous conversation from Satsuki’s perspective:

“Isn’t that Satsuki-san?” Someone called out my name, and it was a girl. I turned my head to look, and saw that it was Kamiki-san: “Oh? It’s Kamiki-san, hello.”

Kamiki-san smiled at me: “Is Satsuki-san alone?” I was never that close to her before, why is she smiling at me?

Suddenly, I remembered that Lin Xiang was standing right next to me! What does she mean by this? Mocking me?

I snuck a glance at Lin Xiang’s face. It looked like he was thinking about something and I replied: “Me? I came with Lin Xiang.” I didn’t wish to see Lin Xiang being looked down on.

After listening to my reply, Kamiki-san looked at Lin Xiang, and revealed a charming smile: “Is that so? Actually Lin Xiang-san is pretty good! In that case, you guys should take your time and choose~ Oh, I just remembered that I have something to do, so I’ll leave first.”

Listening to her words, I suddenly realised it was a pun ! On the surface, she asked us to choose our clothes, but in reality, she must have thought that we’re going out, right? This is her way of giving us her blessings, right? Even though I admit that I like Lin Xiang, this idiot can win an international prize for being a genuine blockhead!

I peeped at Lin Xiang. he was currently deep in thought while looking at Kamiki's back... Wait, don't tell me that this blockhead has finally realised??

"Lin Xiang !! What she said just now...Yuki mistake Italy her." In a moment of excitement, I bit my tongue....

What will he say next? He won't laugh and say : "Are we not like how she said?"

Unfortunately, there's a huge difference between dreams and reality. All I saw was a face that was deeply pondering: "What Kamiki said just now, was there a special meaning behind it?"

Hearing his reply, I laughed at myself: "That's right.... a blockhead will forever be a blockhead...." Why did I even get so excited? He didn't hear what I said that night because he was injured. Furthermore, even after doing so many embarrassing things, he still doesn't understand a thing! So why would a single line with a hidden meaning from Kamiki-san.... No! As long as I work hard, I'll definitely be able to make that blockhead change... change.... change into splithead (splithead is a made up word, Satsuki really couldn't think of any other vocabulary, so she used splithead to show cracking the blockhead open.)

Note: The embarrassing things Satsuki said she did was actually the weird behaviour pointed out by Lin Xiang in the previous chapter.

-----

I only saw Satsuki muttering something, and then she regained her spirit: "There's no meaning! She only said that you must pick nice clothes. Let me say this to you Lin Xiang, for the rest of the day, you need to accompany me."

"Okay!" Are Kamiki and Satsuki close friends? Was that why she was so happy when there was someone to help pick clothes for Satsuki?

If it really was like this, then why have they never talked to each other before? Forget it, it doesn't matter. All I hope for now is to quickly pick nice clothes for Satsuki so that I can return home and head to the demon world to find... something grass? Rano Grass? Or was it Nora Grass?

Sigh, I'm getting old. From the looks of it, having memories of both world is the same as me being 34 years old, my memory is deteriorating.....

“Oh, oh~~~” Satsuki came out from the changing room, and it was a feast for my eyes. I already knew that Satsuki had a good figure, with her being 1.7 meter tall, and having long legs and a small body. Now, she’s wearing a sleeveless vest which displayed her white shoulders, blue denim shorts that completely shows her slender thighs, and furthermore, she also wore black stocking that reached to the end of her thighs. This... how do I say it? It’s sure to make many people’s blood boil.

Afterwards, even though Satsuki wasn’t sure if her clothes matched, after I took a look, she immediately decided to buy it. I took a look at the price tag. That sleeveless vest actually costs 6k, and the denim jeans that have little fabric can actually cost up to 11k?? If you add another 1k to the denim jeans’s price, it would be the same as the beautiful blue dress that I bought for Silent Water. Did the store switch to a black-hearted manager? (100 Yen = 6 RMB )

“Isn’t this too expensive? Satsuki, do you really like it?”

“Expensive? Is it expensive? I don’t think so. As long as it can make a certain someone show some reaction, it’ll be worth it.” After saying some weird remarks, Satsuki continued picking clothes....

-----

“You’ve worked hard today.” Standing in front of Satsuki’s house, Satsuki said to the me who was covered in bags.

“Uh... it’s not hard, it’s not hard. Open the door, I’m going back after I put down the bags.” If it was the me in the past that was carrying these bags, I would be exhausted to death. Now that the dragon gods are living inside me, I’ve changed into a human dragon. My body was 5 to 6 times stronger than an average human, which was also equivalent to a Battle King class.

But, it was only my physique that had reached Battle King class. I didn’t have the ability of a battle king, the ability to apply spirit power to weapons, or the ability to use formidable combat skills. The reason was that my spirit power was very weak.

I thought about it before. Since my spirit power was so weak, and magic power is converted from spirit power, then where did all that magic power that I gave to Silent Water come from? Freed told me. My spirit power capacity should be

unable to change. It would always remain this weak, but since they're living in my body, my body produced a "dragon's ability" that only dragons will have.

Dragon's ability, is a really strong ability. A little bit of the dragon's ability is able to transform into a Magus class magic power... which is equal to Silent Water absorbing the magic power once. (Recently, it feels that she is absorbing more and more, but the time I can hug her has increased as well, which is really great since I can justifiably hug a girl.)

Even though my body's dragon ability is able to convert into a lot of magic power, to be able to make use of Freed's special purification ability — Sacred Fire, this dragon's ability doesn't help much. Probably only about 20% is needed for Sacred Fire. So if I want to use Sacred Fire, I need to burn my soul to make up the remaining 80%. Freed also said that my soul was very powerful. If I'm a person from this world, I'll definitely be able to become a Ruling God or Battle God. But the me from the previous world didn't have spirit ability, and the reason why the people here were able to generate spiritual power, was that ever since birth, they were exposed to spiritual ability, so their souls transformed. That's why they had the ability to produce spiritual power.

When I first heard Freed talking about spiritual ability transforming souls, and souls producing spiritual power, I quickly felt a headache, but I do know one point, and it is that even though my soul is powerful, I wasn't exposed to any spiritual ability, so, I can't produce spiritual power.

"Ah ~~ little Risa is back?" When Satsuki had just opened the door, a beautiful woman that looked a little similar to Satsuki was standing at the entrance.

Satsuki, who had a terrible expression and was a little flustered, said: "Mom..... why are you back so early? Weren't you paying a visit to Uncle Mingde?"

"Sorry about that, a young and beautiful mother suddenly thought of her precious daughter at home, and since she's finally on holiday, she wanted to reward her by cooking for her. And after cooking, she was preparing to go outside to see if her daughter is back yet. Now that mother is feeling guilty. Little did she know that she came back too early, and spoiled her daughter's plan...." Even though Satsuki's mom was speaking from a third person perspective, others were able to understand her. However, the "plan" that she's talking

about, I don't understand what it meant.

"I....." Satsuki only said the word "I" and her face reddened.

Satsuki's mom smilingly looked at the reddened and speechless Satsuki, and gently laughed: "What happened? Not going to introduce this young man to me?"

"He... he's Lin Xiang, don't misunderstand, we're just friends. We're really just normal friends." Satsuki quickly pointed at me, trying to emphasise that I'm just her normal friend.

"I know! Why are you so nervous? I know that you guys are just normal friends. Only normal to the point of going out and buying clothes type of friends ! Mom understands." Satsuki's mom raised her voice when mentioning about buying clothes, but I paid no attention to it. It's just that I felt Satsuki's mom was unexpectedly reasonable. At first I even thought that she'll think that I'm Satsuki's boyfriend.

"Mom! Buying clothes doesn't necessarily mean...." Satsuki's face became even redder. She glanced at me, and became speechless again while her two delicate finger kept making circles.

"Well, even though your dad and I have been busier with our work and rarely come home anymore since you started high school, you're still my daughter, so do you really think mom wouldn't understand you? Quickly come in, look at this girl, making Little Xiang look like a shelf. Even if you like them, was there really a need to buy so much?" When Satsuki's mom called me Little Xiang, it gave me an intimate feeling.

"Dad's..."

"Relax, unless your dad drinks with your uncle till they collapse, he won't come back."

"Oh..." Satsuki heaved a sigh of relief after hearing her mom's words. It should be because her dad doesn't like her daughter bringing a guy back home?

After putting down the bags, I wanted to head home but was persuaded to stay by Satsuki's mom. So I stayed over at Satsuki's house for dinner. Then, I awkwardly sat on her house's big sofa. Both my straightened hands were placed

on my knees to let Satsuki's mom look at me.

“Hm~~~ thick eyebrows, honest looking, strong and courageous, not bad not bad, my daughter's normal friend is pretty good.” Satsuki's mom laughed and said.

“Uh... you're flattering me, Aunty.” What's this? This feeling of some weird atmosphere floating around in the room.

“Mom, why are you sitting over there? Come here and help me, there's too much food, I can't manage it.” At this moment, Satsuki was holding a fish as she said.

Satsuki, you're really great. To tell the truth, I can't really stand your mom. Since just now, she's been asking me question nonstop, as if she's interrogating me.

“Aiyo, my good daughter. Mom didn't complain when she made this much food, and you're complaining? Mom only wants to understand more about your “normal friend”, perhaps in the future....”

“MOM!!!!!! I just remembered.” Satsuki interrupted her mom. Even though I kind of want to know what Satsuki's mom meant by that, I have a feeling that if she continued to talk, this weird atmosphere would become even heavier: “Lin Xiang, didn't you say that you need to make a call to your uncle before dinner? Come with me, I'll take you to the phone.”

“My uncle?” I repeated the statement, unclear of what she meant. After looking at the time, it was already 6, even though the sky wasn't completely dark yet, the sun had already set. Silent Water was waiting for me at home.

“That's right. Aunty, excuse me. I'll go outside for awhile.” After speaking, I went outside with Satsuki, and left behind Satsuki's mom who was grinning face to face.

“I'm really sorry. My mom has reached menopause, so she's very annoying. So please don't mind what she said.” After closing the living room door, Satsuki had an apologetic face as she said this.

“It's fine, it's fine.”

“Okay, then I’ll go serve the dish. You can wait outside, for show.” Satsuki turned around and went back into the kitchen.

It’s not an act, I really needed to make a call. I took out my phone and dialed my house’s number, “Beep...beep...beep...”

“Hello, this is the Lin’s residence.” As expected of Silent Water, her speaking manner is really polite. Speaking of which, this is my first time talking to her through the phone.

“Hello, Silent Water. It’s Lin Xiang. Uh... tonight, I have something going on, so I can’t come back for dinner. You guys go ahead and eat first. Honestly, I really can’t come back to eat. You guys must eat without me, understand?” It’s not that I’m naggy, it’s just that if I don’t say it like this, they would definitely wait till I get back home before they start eating.

“I understand, master.” Silent Water replied and the phone was became quiet.

She hung up the phone? I felt a little suspicious, so I asked again: “Silent Water?”

“Yes? Is there something wrong?” From the phone came Silent Water’s voice.

“No, nothing, ah, that’s all, I’ll come home later.”

“Ok.” Silent Water replied, and no more sound came from the phone.

Silent Water, this girl, unless I hang up the phone, will she never hang up? Really, how should I deal with her... However, with her by my side, it always feels really great.

I said to the phone again: “In that case, see you later.” And I hung up the phone.

Suddenly, I heard someone knocking on the door so I went and open it. Opening the door, I saw a man with a briefcase under his arm. His body reeked of alcohol and a serious look was on the uncle’s face as he stood there. He should be a salesman? Hence, I said: “Sorry, we’re not interested in sales.”

“Oh? Is that so? My apologies, wrong place.” Replied the uncle as he turned around and started to leave.

At this moment, Satsuki who was serving the dishes, ran over: “Dad?”

### **Volume 2 Chapter 3 – Freedom, Uncle’s Phone Call, and the Road to School**

“AHAHAHA! Little Risa is all grown up now, she actually brought a boyfriend back!” Sitting in front of me and holding a wineglass while laughing crazily was an uncle whose beard had grown to a serious degree — Satsuki’s dad.

“Seriously, Dad. What kind of drunken nonsense are you saying? Stop drinking, you’ve already drank so much at uncle’s house.” Satsuki snatched away the wineglass from Uncle.

The reason why I called him Uncle in my mind, is simply because I really couldn’t accept the fact that he’s Satsuki’s dad. Parallel world or not, it really looks like anything can happen.

“No wonder you kept staring at your phone yesterday. So it was because you were waiting for this kid’s call?” That one sentence from Uncle made Satsuki panic: “I wasn’t, I wasn’t. Didn’t I said this countless times before? I was on the internet, looking at the weather forecast.”

“That’s right, dear, Little Risa was really looking at the weather forecast.” Satsuki’s mom who had always made Satsuki embarrassed was actually speaking up for Satsuki.

“That’s right, that’s right !” Seeing that her mom was helping her, Satsuki repeated what her mom had said.

Before Uncle could speak, Satsuki’s mom quickly added: “ So as you can see, isn’t the weather today particularly good? It’s because the weather was good, that Little Risa was able to buy so many clothes. It’s also because the weather was good, that Little Xiang was able to help bring the bags back. It seems like today’s weather forecast is very accurate.”

“Mom... you...” Satsuki’s face became red.

Uncle laughed. Afterwards, his face that was bright red due to his drinking, turned to face me and said: “Kid, have you and my daughter already done those things?”

“Those things?” I didn’t understand what Uncle meant by those things.

“Um..... It’s making little....”

“DAD!!! I suddenly feel that it’s better for you to continue drinking, and! Don’t just keep talking and forget about eating. Do you know what time is it now? It’s already 7, you already chatted for half an hour. Don’t you guys know that Lin Xiang needs to go back home?” Satsuki forced a wineglass into Uncle’s hand, and pointed towards the clock on the wall.

“Aiya? Daughter’s angry? Dad only wanted to know how far you guys have gotten.” Uncle looked at the wineglass in his hand, poured some wine, and happily drank.

“I’ve already said that we are just normal friends!!!” Once again, Satsuki emphasized the fact that we’re just normal friends.

“That’s right, dear, quickly eat. Little Xiang is just Little Risa’s first normal guy friend that she brought home. Seriously, you’re already a grown man but you’re acting like a bitch.” Satsuki’s mom said to Uncle with a hint of anger.

“If the wife says so, then fine. Let’s start eating. Come Little Xiang, to celebrate you being the first normal guy friend that Satsuki brought home, let’s drink.” Uncle nodded his head and put a wine glass in front of me.

“No no no, I’m still underage, I can’t drink. Also, if I drink, chances are that I’ll pass out.”

“Don’t worry, you can just stay overnight here if you pass out. Little Risa’s bed is pretty comfortable.” Satsuki’s mom answered.

“Um... Forget it.” I’ve already slept there once before. I wouldn’t dare to compliment Satsuki’s sleeping posture. Even now, I could still remember being tightly embraced by Satsuki, to the point of me being unable to breathe, which caused me to wake up....

—————

Phew, I’m finally free. It’s already 8:30. Satsuki’s parents sure knows how to ‘passionately welcome guest with hospitality’. The reason why they talked for so long was because they thought that I was Satsuki’s boyfriend. No wonder why

they were talking so strangely just a moment ago.

As I stood in front of Satsuki's house, I deeply sighed with extreme emotion.

"Sorry, Lin Xiang, my parents are a little excited today." Satsuki had a very apologetic look on her face. I've already lost count on how many times I've seen that look today.

"I do feel that your parents are... quite passionate..."

"It's just them being too excited, that's all. It's already this late, let me send you back?"

"..... Why are you sending me back?" Shouldn't it be the guy that sends the girl back? Since when did the reverse happen?

"I'm worried that you'll meet some bad guys on your way back." Satsuki said that with a serious look.

"Think about it, will bad guys make a move on a guy or a girl?"

"Girls, I guess?"

"So you do know?"

"..... But....."

"No buts.... Listen to me Little Risa, go to his house tonight... Ahem... Coughcough... No problem, you're already grown up." Said Uncle, while hiccuping.

"DAD, GO BACK INSIDE! I'm really sorry, Lin Xiang, you should leave quickly. Their behaviour today is starting to make me doubt whether they're really my parents." Satsuki pushed Uncle's head back inside when his head peeked out, and once again apologized to me.

Indeed, are there any parents that would allow their own daughter to stay over at a guy's place? Don't tell me that they would trust me that much?

"Ok, Satsuki, see you tomorrow at school."

"Ok, see you at school." Satsuki waved her hands at me and returned back to her house.

As I was leaving, I still could hear Uncle's drunk talk. Things like "why didn't you

follow?” . Stuff like that.

“Ring ring ring~~ ring ring ring~~” Half way back home, my phone rang.

But after seeing that the call was from my uncle, I could not help but be taken aback. ‘I’ knew that my uncle was a busy man even though ‘I’ didn’t know what his line of work was, so other than him giving ‘me’ a call, ‘I’ normally wouldn’t call him.

This was also my first time receiving a call from him after coming to this world for 2 weeks. I felt my voice shake a little:” Hello? Uncle?”

“Little Xiang, are you busy with anything? Why didn’t you pick up my calls from before?” Uncle’s voice was exactly the same as how I remembered, still very firm.

“Before? Oh, I was eating dinner at my friend’s house and I left my phone on the sofa, so I didn’t see.”

“Ok, let’s not talk about this. I want to ask you, do you have a girlfriend?”

“No, why?” Strange, why would Uncle ask me this question?

Furthermore, it sure would be nice if I did have a girlfriend. Sadly, no girl would like the weak me.

“You don’t? Are you sure?” From the phone, Uncle’s voice carried a hint of doubt.

“I’m sure.” I confidently answered.

“In that case, what’s the deal with you going shopping with a girl named Satsuki Risa today?” Strange, how did Uncle know about Satsuki?

“Her? She’s my friend. She only asked me out to help her carry stuff for her today. Uncle, how did you know about it?”

“Put aside how I know about it first, you need to tell me, are you sure Satsuki Risa isn’t your girlfriend?”

“I’m sure. She really isn’t my girlfriend. She and I just have a slightly good relationship; she thinks of me as a sister.”

“Really?” After hearing this, it seems like Uncle heaved a sigh of relief and said:

“Actually, who you want as your girlfriend is fine with me, I just wanted to know about it.”

“Hey Uncle, you’re kinda acting very strange?” From Uncle’s tone just now, it was very obvious that he doesn’t want me to get a girlfriend.

“I promised something with someone that I can’t tell you. Also, I don’t oppose you dating that Satsuki Risa girl. Even if she’s your girlfriend, it would be fine. However, when you do have a girlfriend, you must inform me immediately... I know you feel suspicious, but listen to this, everything isn’t that complicated, it’s just that I promised someone so I can’t tell you about it. So don’t mind it too much. You just need to remember, when you have a girlfriend, you must inform me immediately. Understand?”

“Yes Uncle.”

“Ok, then I’m hanging up. Remember, you can choose who you want as your girlfriend, but you must inform me immediately.” Uncle emphasized this point again.

“I know, then goodbye, Uncle.” Even though I was a little suspicious, he’s still my Uncle in this world and the other world. My flesh and blood Uncle wouldn’t harm me.

-----

“Chirp chirp chirp chirp.” The sound small birds was my alarm.

I petted Dusty who was by my side, got out of bed, and entered the washroom.

Brushing my teeth and washing my face at night are things that I’ll do on a daily basis but now, it’s not that I stopped doing it, it’s just that there’s something else I need to do now, and that’s brushing Dusty’s teeth.

I couldn’t recall which day it was, should be about 3 days after Dusty came to my house? That night, after seeing me brush my teeth, it started barking. At that point in time, I didn’t understand what it meant, so I asked what it wanted. Dusty, who could understand human language, walked two circles in front of me, opened the tap, and opened its mouth. Then it took a mouthful of water and spat it out.

After that happened, I understood Dusty that wanted to brush its teeth. So I helped it everyday.

Honestly, even though Dusty was the lowest class of Earth element spirits, its spirituality was very strong. I'm not sure whether it's because it's female or it knows that it was about to sleep with me, but it loves being clean. Everyday, it insists on bathing with me. Furthermore, every time it finished taking a stroll outside, it'll always enter the washroom first and wash its own paws....

After brushing Dusty's teeth, we, a human and a dog (spirit), went down the stairs and enjoyed the breakfast that Silent Water made.

Today's menu was dumplings. With regards to Silent Water's household skills, I can no longer be surprised.

Cleanliness. As long as the place was cleaned by Silent Water, it would be spotless and shine like it was brand new. No matter how dirty the clothes that we wore everyday were, it would become clean again. Also, after being washed, it'll dry instantly.

Cooking. I really don't want to mention this. Even though Silent Water doesn't dare to admit it, she can cook anything as long as you tell her what food you want. She'll definitely be able to make it, and it'll taste incredible. Even better than those made in a 5 star chef.

After eating breakfast, Silent Water prepared a bento for me.

After putting the bento into my bag, I bid her farewell and embarked on the scary road of no return; to school.

Why did I say that going to school was a scary road of no return? For this, I have to thank my neighbour who became strange -- Satsuki Risa..... Thanks to her doing intimate things to me in the public; for example, like snatching away my juice last time, and fearlessly sitting on my desk and staring at me after class for some reason..... And taking the initiative to put my hand on her head so that I can rub it.....

I'm worried that a strong magician or battle technician who liked Satsuki might someday appear on my way to school and get rid of me. Ah, look, I've only just started worrying about this and a magician has already appeared not far away

from me. And it's a fire mage. If he's a lightning or ice type, I wouldn't really care, but the problem was that he's a fire type.

Everyone knew that ice, fire, and lightning are capable of killing someone. Within magic enchantments, lightning attribute spells are instant and the high voltage released could paralyse the enemy. For ice attribute spells, needless to say, it was able to freeze the enemy. Then what about spells of the fire attribute? That's right, he's capable of burning the enemy.

If I were to let you choose, which attack will you choose to repel? For me, other than those of the fire attribute, I would pick any of the rest.

Speaking of which, who am I even explaining this to now? Is it nerdy Lin Xiang's memories that's explaining to me? I feel a bit weird.

I calmly avoided the fire magician and took a new path to school...

————— School

When I entered the classroom, the majority of the guys had a disappointed look on their face. They should be thinking: "Why? It's already been a week, how did the trap that the Satsuki Fan Club and I set up for Lin Xiang fail? It's obviously just the useless Lin Xiang."

If they asked me this way, I'll answer back: "Sorry, but I'm no longer the Lin Xiang you use to know."

Everyday, when I entered the classroom, other than the disappointed looks from the guys, there's a girl that looked at me with smiling eyes; my normal friend, Satsuki Risa. Other than her, there wasn't any other girl who would look at me.

Hm? I suddenly feel someone staring at me. That person's.... Kamiki Kuji?

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 2 Chapter 4 – Unexpected Turn of Events, Kamiki Kuji's Hostility, Engagement**

"Freed, what do you say I should do when I am hated by a girl, no, hated by a

girl for unknown reason?”

‘Are you talking about that human girl called Kamiki?’

‘That’s right. I really don’t understand. How did I offend her?’ I have no idea how to react to that glare that Kamiki gave me. She had never looked me straight in the face before....

‘Perhaps she already hated the ‘you’ in the past?’

‘Why do you say that?’

‘The impression that you have of everyone now is from the memories of the other ‘you’, right?’

‘Err...’

‘Since you know what kind of person the you from this world was, then why hasn’t it occurred to you that it could be because ‘you’ didn’t notice her hostility when looking at you, and hence, caused you to have the misconception that she didn’t notice you in the first place?’

After listening to Freed’s words, it suddenly came to me. That’s right, ‘my’ senses were pretty bad. It should be a given that ‘I’ wouldn’t be able to sense people who secretly gave me looks, right? Just like how I noticed that someone was staring at me moments ago. If it wasn’t for my senses being five to six times the norm, I doubt I would be able to tell that it was Kamiki who had been staring at me.

“You should more or less understand this, right? Here’s what I think: ‘You’ couldn’t have purposefully went and offended that human called Kamiki. So, it should either be an environmental or a human factor that had caused it. As for the specific reason, I’m not sure why. Look, she glanced at you again. From the look in her eyes, I think she wanted to talk to you about something.”

“Really?” Kamiki Kuji had something that she wanted to talk to me about? Did something happen between us?

“Ring ring ring.” The bell rang at the end of the class, as if it’s congratulating me for not paying attention in class again today.

“Hey, stupid Lin Xiang, what were you thinking about just now?” Satsuki

showed off her usual busybody skills. I was starting to feel that this world's Satsuki was getting more and more similar to the previous world's Satsuki.

"I was only wondering why Satsuki is so beautiful today." I replied as I looked past Satsuki's head and stared at Kamiki Kuji's back.

"Really? You noticed?" Satsuki said something I didn't quite understand. Then, she pulled out a black hairpin from her hair and said: "I thought you wouldn't notice, since it was such a small hairpin."

"What mom said was really true." Satsuki's expression was filled with happiness.

"What did your mom say?" Sorry, Satsuki, I didn't notice that hairpin. I was looking at Kamiki Kuji. If you hadn't taken it out, I really wouldn't have noticed....

"My mom said that if you're able to notice this hairpin, then you'll be worthy as my..."

"Worthy as your what?" Satsuki suddenly stopped, and her face turned beet red. This made me all the more curious about what her mom told her.

"She said... she said... that you would be worthy as my precious sister... and she also told me to never let go of you, my good sister...." Satsuki lowered her head.

"Is that so? Don't worry, I'll never leave you." I did promise nerdy Lin Xiang that I would take good care of you and never let you be harmed.

"Really?" Satsuki lifted her head, her eyes were actually sparkling with tears. She suddenly hugged me, completely ignoring all the other classmates in the room. "I knew it! I know it, I knew that you actually felt it. As I thought, you actually knew this whole time, right? You're so mean. You actually had me come out and say it. You're too mean."

Satsuki leaned on me. Her arms firmly hung around my neck and pressed my face tightly against her creamy neck. Faced with such an event, my brain just went "bang", and short circuited itself. But quickly enough, the murderous glare from all the boys in the room had awakened me from my stupor.

"Um... Satsuki?? What are you doing? Quick... quickly, let go, people are looking at us." Seeing no reaction from Satsuki, I quickly tapped at the arms that

she had tightly around my neck. “You’re strangling me.”

After hearing this, Satsuki finally responded. She moved to sit on my thighs, but her arms still hung around my neck and her beautiful face was only centimeters away from mine. I could clearly feel her breath:” Sorry, I got a little too excited, so I just..... Hehe.”

Why is she so happy? Just because I would be a good sister and never leave her?

Just when I was about to say this, Freed stopped me. ‘Brat, if you say this in front of all these people, do you believe me that this human girl will ignore you forever?’

‘What’ I was shocked by Freed’s words. Satsuki would ignore me forever? I didn’t dare to imagine that.

“Afraid now? You’re such a dunce. You don’t understand a girl’s heart. Listen up and repeat after me.”

.....

“What? Your parents won the lottery? Isn’t this great? So they really won 100 billion yen?” I repeated the words exactly as they were said by Freed, and even followed his instructions to act all surprised.

Satsuki looked at me suspiciously. Then, after looking around her, Satsuki jumped up:” Aiya, seriously, I got a little too excited. It’s your fault. You’re clearly a good sister, so can’t you just let me hug for awhile? Why is your face so red?”

“...” Can you take a look at the mirror at yourself before talking about my face being red? “Ha~~ Even though I feel that 100 billion yen means nothing to your family, I’m only a commoner. To me, 100 billion yen is a lot, so I got too excited and, I don’t know why, but I just had the urge to want to hug you.....” Suddenly I felt like dying. Clearly, it was Satsuki who hugged me, but now I had to turn it around and say that I was the one who wanted Satsuki to hug me.....

-----

Unexpectedly, everyone accepted the rationale I gave. Although the girls had no reaction, the guys were giving me weird looks, with a mixture of hatred and

relief. It seemed as though they were angry because Satsuki was on intimate terms with me. At the same time, they were also relieved because Satsuki only considered me as her good sister.

‘Whew! I’ll say, Freed, I really don’t understand girls. Why is it that they are so difficult to understand?’

‘I think it’s because you seldom interact with girls, and you pretty much dedicated half of your life to fighting, so that’s why you have such a low EQ.’

‘What does low EQ got to do with understanding girls?’

‘Forget it. If a human like yourself still don’t understand, I feel that I, as a dragon that has been dead for thousands of years without ever getting married, am ill qualified to teach you.’

‘I don’t understand what you’re saying. Anyway, what should I do now?’ When I saw the way Satsuki looked at me, and her elated expression, I couldn’t help but feel a deep and indescribable helplessness.

‘You can just think of it as that this human girl is happy because she has found her one and only good sister.’

‘Oh! So that’s it.’

‘.....’ Freed was silent for a moment, then said, ‘Perhaps you haven’t noticed but when that human girl was hugging you, I noticed that happiness was written all over that human Kamiki’s face. It seemed as though that she really wanted you and Satsuki to get together. Then afterwards, she seemed to have thought of something and became angry again. The way she looked at you was even worse than usual.’

‘Oh? How come?’

‘How should I know? You think I’m god? Ack.. Even if I’m a dragon god, it’s not possible for me to know what people are thinking. Anyway, believe me, she’ll soon come and talk to you. Oh, the school bell rang, hey, look, she’s coming, get ready for a confrontation.’

‘Hey, what and what? I’m not ready yet.’

‘Then tell her yourself that you’re not ready.’

“Lin Xiang-kun, can you come with me for a bit?” Just as Freed had predicted, Kamiki Kuji really wanted to talk to me.

“Okay” I nodded. Even though I was not prepared, if I could figure out why she hated me, this would be an opportunity not to be missed.

Just like this, I left the classroom with Kamiki as Satsuki glared at us with a gaze that brimmed with the smell of gunpowder...

————— Rooftop

“You should know by now right?” Kamiki Kuji’s soft and tender hands were grabbing tightly onto the fence.

“What are you referring to?” What did she mean by that? Was she saying that I already knew why she hated me?

“You’re still playing dumb? Satsuki is obviously attracted to you, so why, why won’t you let me go?”

“.....” I won’t let you go? What? Weren’t you the one who hated me because of some reason?

“Why aren’t you saying anything? I hit the nail on the head, didn’t I? I don’t know what an outstanding girl like Satsuki-san sees in you, but Lin Xiang, couldn’t you have some self-awareness? Even though I’m your fiance, I really hate you.”

Kamiki turned around and said to me angrily:” I admit, my family does owe your family a very huge favor, and I admit that your father was a very strong battle technician. However, did you know? The sisters I grew up with were married off at the age of fourteen due to family relations and were abused by their husbands! Ever since then, I felt that they were pitiful, very pitiful. They gave up on their own happiness, all for the sake of their families. At the same time, I felt lucky to be part of an established family. Since my family wouldn’t have to suck up to others, I wouldn’t become a tool in these familial dealings.

But! Just when high school was about to start, my parents told me that I would be the fiancée to one of the boys in my class. This was a big blow to me. They told me that the boy was the son of Lin Fan, the famous Battle Technician.

After hearing the news, I cried for a long time, and real hard too. I cried myself to sleep. When I woke up, I figured that it was not that big of a deal. My sisters were able to endure it, so why wouldn't I? After all, this is common among noble families, and I am just another unlucky pawn in this gambit.

Finally, high school started, and I saw my fiance! The you who everyone called trashy Lin Xiang!!!

At first, I thought there were some reasons that you hid your true abilities. But after a week, I realised that you were utter trash!

Thinking about it, I figured that since you're good for nothing and your parents are dead, then the engagement can be annulled, right? I told my father about it, but who knew that he was so old-fashioned, and insisted that we kept our promises and that I be betrothed to you....

Your uncle Lin Hao knew about my situation, and told my Dad: "Since your family's princess is unwilling, then let's not force her. We advocate freedom of love these days. How about this, let's not interfere with their matters, and let them develop naturally. If they each find someone they like, then we can annul the engagement."

What your uncle said was so nice and so reasonable. But my Dad said, "No, this isn't fair to Lin Xiang. Lin Xiang still doesn't know about the engagement. If he had known, he might have agreed to it. So, the freedom of love needs only be applied to Childe Lin Xiang, there is no need to worry about my daughter."

And so, that was how the matter was settled. In these past two months, I've always seen you as an eyesore. I was thinking, how on earth could such a useless guy like you actually have the courage to live on? How would any girl ever be attracted to someone as incompetent as as you?

That day, when I saw you buying women underwear at the Meredith clothing store, I thought you were some kind of pervert who bought women's underwear to make yourself feel better. But it never occurred to me that you actually hooked up with Satsuki.

Even though since two weeks ago, I had a feeling that you and Satsuki had grown closer, I never thought much of it. That is, until yesterday, when I saw you out shopping, and buying clothes with Satsuki. Have you any idea how happy I

was at the time?

I went back and told my Dad about it, that you already had a girlfriend. After he heard it, he said something that really put my heart at ease, “If this is indeed the case, then we can annul the engagement.”

Then, who would have thought that that night, your uncle actually told my father that you didn’t actually have a girlfriend???

If it wasn’t because that you knew that you have such a pretty fiancée, would you have lied about being together with Satsuki? You were still pretending this morning. When Satsuki was hugging you, you were clearly very happy. But it was because of me that you came up with such a lie, right?”

After hearing Kamiki’s side of the story, I finally got it., I finally understood why Kamiki would look at me with such hostility, understood why Kamiki was so happy yesterday, understood what my uncle’s phone call yesterday night was all about, understood what Freed meant when he said Kamiki went from happy to disgusted when she saw Satsuki hugging me....

I took a deep breath, and said: “I don’t know if you’ll believe me, but I never knew about having such a pretty fiancée. Also, there’s really nothing going on between Satsuki and I. Plus, couldn’t you have just told me about this earlier, and have me talk to your dad about annulling this engagement?”

“Go ahead and keep pretending, I’ve seen through your games. Alright, let me tell you, even if you’re willing to annul the engagement, my Dad would definitely say that I manipulated you. That old-fashioned man definitely won’t agree to it. So, let me make it clear now. I don’t care whether you knew about it or not, all I ask is that you let me go. Just be satisfied and go out with that Satsuki, alright? I am not like her who has bad taste in men. I couldn’t possibly like you. As I said, we are not compatible.”

“Hey! Watch what you’re saying, what’s with Satsuki having bad taste in men and all? Let me tell you, there’s nothing going on between me and Satsuki. It doesn’t matter whether I know about the engagement or not, what I do know is that I’ll never f–king go out with you!!!” I shouted my last sentence in Chinese. After that, I stormed back downstairs, not giving a hoot whether this woman understood me or not. I was angry, for real. This woman was simply too full of

herself.

The bell rang just when I stepped into the classroom....

–‘What did you Kamiki-san talk about?’ Satsuki passed a little note over.

Should I tell her? I was a little hesitant about whether I should tell her.

‘Don’t tell her.’ Just as I was troubled by this, Freed came to my rescue.

‘Why not?’

‘Just my gut feeling. Anyway, just don’t tell her. It’s not like you have any relationship with that human, so what good is it if you tell that human Satsuki girl about such trifle matters?’

“Then, what should I say?”

‘Just write – That human asked me, what did your parents buy to win that 100 billion yen lottery? She wants to get it too.’

‘But... If I write this, will she really believe it?’

‘She will, she will. The way she is now, she will believe you, unconditionally.’

‘Really?’ Satsuki will believe me unconditionally? For real? But, I don’t doubt Freed’s words. After all, we share the same body. He wouldn’t do something that would mean us harm. If it were that frivolous Yalide.... I would feel a little....

I jotted down what Freed said, word for word and when the teacher wasn’t looking, I passed the note back to Satsuki.

Not even a minute had passed when Satsuki sent me another note. — ‘Is that so? Um, you should just say that even you don’t know. By the way, you’re being weird here. That human? Aren’t you one yourself?’

When I saw how Satsuki had circled the two words “that human” in my note, I couldn’t help but laugh at myself. Wasn’t I too stupid? I actually jotted down everything Freed had said word for word...

‘Don’t worry about such minor details. Pay attention during class, pay attention during class.’

I passed the note back to Satsuki. After she had a look at it, she looked at me, and went back to paying attention to the lecture.

————— Lunch Break

During lunch, Satsuki nestled her body against me. Then, she opened up my lunchbox and wanted to feed me?

“Stop stop stop, stop it Satsuki, there’s no need to feed me. I can eat by myself.”

“Why? We’re already... Hold on... will wood become timber without getting chopped? The answer is no... don’t tell me...” Satsuki looked a little scared as she whispered to herself. All of a sudden, she looked me and asked: “Hey, stupid Lin Xiang, what’s our relationship now?”

“What relationship? Aren’t we really close sisters?” After hearing my reply, Satsuki made a face like she had expected this, and thump me on my chest with her fist. The body that was leaning against me then moved away, and Satsuki returned to her seat. As she stared at her bento, Satsuki mumbled, “Wait a minute, really close sisters? So I’ve progressed a tiny step. No matter. Yup, that’s right, it’s perfectly normal for sisters who are really close to have body contact, right?” After Satsuki was done talking to herself, she looked at me for a while, then leaned on me again, “All of a sudden, I feel dead tired. So, be a good sister and lend me your huge body to rest for a bit.”

“Um... I don’t have a problem with that.” Even though Satsuki’s body wasn’t soft like Silent Water’s, it still felt pretty perky.

“Quick, feed me.” Satsuki actually demanded while acting like a spoiled child.

“Everyone’s looking.”

“What’s there to be afraid of when we’re close sisters?”

Finally, I gave in. Under the gaze of the boys in class that sent shivers down my spine, I fed Satsuki her lunch.

“Just a moment ago, a piece of rice fell into my school uniform. Hurry up and help me get it out.”

“This. . . Just let it go, please?” My heart started to beat really fast when I first heard her request. After thinking about it for a bit, I decided that we should just let it go.

Having Satsuki lean on me, and me feeding Satsuki her lunch, with just these two events, I was beginning to worry whether I could come to school tomorrow. Now, she even asked me to reach into her uniform to get a piece of rice out? Forget if I would be killed on the spot, I was a bit worried as to what kind of person Satsuki would become. How could she be so oblivious of boys? Or is she just too trusting of me? No matter how you slice it, aren't I a boy? Or was it that, in her eyes, I was just another girl, her good sister?

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 2 Chapter 5 – Soy Sauce, Salesgirl, Picking up the Goods**

“Master, we are out of that soy sauce seasoning.” Silent Water told me after dinner while we were watching television together.

“Oh, got it, I'll go and buy some now. Oh right, Silent Water, I forgot to tell you but I've found a way to conceal your spiritual aura, so you can go out in the future.”

“Really?” Silent Water's eyes were wide open. Even though in the past she had said that she didn't mind, whenever she saw the beautiful scenery of the mountains, forest and sea, her eyes were always filled with expectation. I knew that she always wanted to experience life outside.

“It's true, it's just that recently I've been busy with school, so I can only go to the Demon World during the weekends to find Nora Grass.”

“Demon World? Nora Grass?” Silent Water squint her eyes, while revealing a worried expression, “It's fine Master, the Demon World is too dangerous. Furthermore, Nora Grass is poisonous to Spirits, so it can't be eaten.”

“Poisonous? What's going on?” Nora Grass is poisonous? What is that Freed doing?

“Nora Grass is the most commonly found wild grass in the Demon World. Even though it's common, wood spirits do not dare to consume it. Its poison will cause our spirit power to decrease, and drain our magic power. Hence, that grass is considered a taboo amongst spirits.”

“There’s such a thing?” That Freed didn’t tell me about it. ‘Hey, Freed you bastard, what are you trying to do? Why didn’t you tell me about this?’

‘Hey, asshole, can you not hear only one side of the story? She’s talking about using it as food while I was talking about carrying it. I never said anything about eating. Bastard who only hears one side of the story, can you grow a heart? If you’re still worried, go and ask her whether spirits can touch Nora Grass!’ Freed got angry...

“Silent Water, if it’s just touching the Nora Grass, will it cause spirits any harm?” For the sake of Silent Water’s safety, it’s best that I ask first.

“That shouldn’t be a problem. Some spirits even use Nora Grass to build houses.”

“Is that so... that puts me at ease. Uh... let me tell you, you see Nora Grass, if you carry it with you, it will shield your spirit aura.”

“No wonder some spirits used it to build their houses, so it was because of this effect? Excuse me, where did you get hold of this information?” It seemed that Silent Water got excited after hearing this information. It should be because she could finally go and explore the outside world?

“About this... I read about it in a book. You know, some people are crazy about spirits that they understand spirits more than spirits understand themselves. That’s why it’s not strange that they know about Nora Grass’s effect.”

“So that’s how it is...” Silent Water nodded her head before knitting her eyebrows, as if she had thought of something, “I think it’s better to just forget about it. The Demon World is too dangerous, I can’t let you go.”

“Listen, Little Silent, it’s true that the Demon World is dangerous, but if it allows you to be able to live like a normal person, then no matter how dangerous it is, I’ll still do it. Don’t forget, I took care of that superior demon in one shot.” Took care of a superior demon in one shot, I can’t believe I actually said that... For one superior demon, I had already burned my soul once. Then what about ten or a thousand? How many times can I burn my soul?

A smile appeared from Silent Water, “Mn! Master is the best, I believe in Master, but if you want to go, please take me along with you. Like this, if there’s

any danger, we can take it on together.”

We’re only going to the Demon World to get some grass, it’s not like we’re going to fight. Besides, I don’t want Silent Water to find out that my body harbors something that was once the Demon World’s administrator — Yalide, “We’ll talk about that when the time comes. I’ll go out and buy some soy sauce now.”

“Okay, please be careful out there.”

—————

“Thank you, please come again.” The clerk said to me with a polite smile.

I took the soy sauce and some snacks, and left the shop.

The streets at night were filled with people. Shoppers, vendors, and some girls who were standing by the side of the road who waved at some older men. After some exchange, those men left with the girls. It should be the parents came and fetched their daughters, right? That was what came to my mind first, but it seemed that one of the girls in front of me was being yelled at by some perverted looking baldy?

“Who do you think you are? You want three million? You think you’re some kinda angel?”

The young girl hung her head low while being scolded. Her fingers drawing circles. Then, she timidly said with a very lovely voice, “My dad’s sick. I need money, so.....”

“I don’t care if your family is sick, the most I can give is three hundred thousand.” The baldy fiercely said.

“No... No... This is my first time... Furthermore... It’s because my father is sick, that’s why I...” The girl’s voice was very sweet. Just hearing her pleads, my heart went out to her.

“A little slut like you dares to bargain with me? So what if it’s your first time?” The brutish baldy that raised his hand looked as if he was going to slap the girl’s face.

“Pa~~~” A loud bang. The young girl raised her head and found that the baldy’s

hand was caught by a guy, and that uncle's face revealed signs of pain.

That's right, that guy was me, Lin Xiang.

Even though I had no idea what they were talking about, what I did know was that they weren't related. Besides, I didn't want to see a girl getting hit.

"Bullying a girl, do you even consider yourself a man? You're already this old, and you even went so far as to hit a 16 or 17 year old girl, in the middle of the streets no less. Do you have no shame?"

"Little brat, what does that have to do with you? I'm her customer, I do what I want to do." The baldy wanted to pull back his hand but sadly, I couldn't feel anything from that weak strength of his.

Her customer? This girl is a saleswoman? Was it because her father got sick that she came out working at such a young age? This is really pitiful.

"In that case, you can get lost. I'm her customer now." I swung my arms around, and that baldy nearly fell. After he steadied himself from flailing around, he shouted at me, "You smelly brat, you're her customer? Fine! You virgin of a brat can be her customer, I'm leaving." He pointed towards the girl, "You can now go after this brat, little slut! I'll see how much money he can give you for your dad's treatment." After yelling at the girl, who had her head hung low, the baldy left with a snort.

I gave a disgusted look at the baldy, and counted my lucky stars: I was glad that he left quickly, if he didn't, I really would have to beat him up...

I turned around and looked at the girl, who was still keeping her head down, and asked, "What are you selling?" Even though I have no interest in her product, from their conversation just now, I understood that her father was sick, so I decided to lend her a helping hand. After all, she was a filial daughter, to work for the sake of her father.

"I'm.... I'm not doing sales, but if you're talking about sales, I guess it counts as well?" The girl's head hung low, her supple hair covered her face. I could only see her pure white chin, and her slightly tilted lips.

"Ack.... Your answer really got me confused.... How about this? Whatever you are selling, I'll buy it."

“Really?” The girl lifted her head. Her skin was like fresh fallen snow. Her face was adorably cute. Below her long lashes, her eyes were bright and electrifying. In addition, her somewhat full lips were rather seductive. The most strikingly were her breasts. I could only describe her as “out of this world”.

Many people thought that girls who looked like the main heroine in mangas: big chest, small waist, pretty and adorable face, did not exist. In reality, the girl in front of me was just like a heroine in manga. Hers seemed bigger than Silent Water’s and Satsuki’s, and maybe even bigger than Meiko sensei’s?

W-wait! What’s wrong with me? It’s my first time meeting this girl and I’m checking out her chest? Aren’t I too perverted?

Because of my guilty conscience for harboring these thoughts about the girl, I immediately replied, “Really, I’m speaking the truth.”

“Bu... But it’s three million...” The girl was a little doubtful of me having that much money.

“Well.. It’s true that it’s a bit expensive, but it doesn’t matter. I don’t mind telling you this, I, er, I have no parents.” That’s right, I lost my parents for over twenty years (that is, if I added both my memories, and the memories of the other “me” together, it would be over twenty years).

“I’m really sorry about this, but why... help me? So it really was because...” The girl looked at her chest, looked at me, and mumbled to herself, “But there are plenty girls out there who are bigger and are cuter than me. Even if I’m a Intermediate Magician, isn’t three million a bit too much?”

“Well... Even though I don’t understand what you’re thinking, I just want you to know that since I’ve lost my parents, I understand the pain of losing them, and I envy people who still have theirs. So I don’t want you to lose your father. That’s all.”

“You... you really are a kind person....” The girl was very emotional. Clear liquid glistened down from her large and beautiful eyes. The girl was crying. I knew she was very grateful, but whenever I see a girl cry, I get flustered. In a panic, I blurted out, “Let’s go, let’s go. Let’s go to the bank. Do you have a bank card?”

“Mn, mn, mn. I do, I do.” Ecstatic, the girl wiped away her tears and began to

smile. I was stunned when I saw her previously tear stained face light up in a brilliant smile. This girl.... was really pretty. I felt like... protecting her....

‘Want to protect her?’ Freed spoke.

‘How’d you know?’

‘We both know whatever you might be thinking. Do you know why you and I communicate more often than you with Yalide?’

‘Um... I don’t know.’

‘It’s because we can tell what you are thinking and know that subconsciously, you didn’t quite trust that ‘frivolous’ Yalide. Hahaha.’

‘Damn Freed! What are you laughing at? Also, brat, you really disappointed me. You kept cursing me today, calling me frivolous in your mind.... Yours truly had lived for who knows how many millions of years, and have been dead for millennium. How could you even call me ‘frivolous’?’

‘Now, let’s all ignore that crazy black dragon. Let me tell you, your disgraceful way of checking her out, and your feeling of wanting to protect her, they all stemmed from our love and concern for those who worship us.’

‘What do you mean? Those who worship you?’

‘Ah.... Sorry! Let me give you a simplified explanation. Actually, the girl is blessed by Fortuna, the goddess of fortune. Um... this is really a bit hard to explain. Anyway, her... I don’t really know how to say this. Her situation and ours are similar. We lend you our power while we inhabit your body, but we retain our consciousness. In her case, even though her body possesses the power from Fortuna, Fortuna’s consciousness is no more. Do you understand what I mean? This girl is the embodiment of the goddess’ power itself.

‘What are you saying? This girl is the embodiment of the power itself?’

‘Forget it. I knew you wouldn’t understand. My guess is that when she was young, the girl might have had a brush with death, and the goddess of fortune, Fortuna, gave her own power to the girl so that the girl could live on. As a result, Fortuna’s power and the girl has become one. In other words, the power became part of the girl. Understand it now?’

‘Oh....’ I replied, kind of understood the explanation, kind of not. Following up with a question, I asked, ‘So, that Fortuna, the goddess of fortune, is a god?’

‘Just because someone is called a goddess, does it necessarily make her a god? In that case, just because Sister Feng<sup>1</sup> is named after the phoenix, does it make her as pretty as one?’

‘That’s strange. How do you know about Sister Feng?’

‘This has to do with my time wandering through different time and space. A person’s fate can vary depending on the time and space. Take for example, in this time and space, you may be a bum, while in a different time and space, you could be a thriving entrepreneur.... All these various futures, all hinge on the choices that you are making right now.... That woman who is called Sister Feng, she has left me with a very strong impression because she is such a tragic figure. In every time and space that I have been, her looks... well, you know. In addition, remember what I have said, about how one’s future hinges on the decisions that one is making right here and right now? Well, that Sister Feng’s fate was decided the moment she was born.

‘Why? It’s not like she had to become Sister Feng... Wasn’t it because she had made a decision somewhere along the way that had resulted in her becoming Sister Feng?’

‘Uh.... Actually, the decision wasn’t made by her, rather her parents... since they were the ones who had decided to give birth to her....’

‘....’ I was lost for words. Fate is indeed a terrifying thing.

‘Anyway, we’ve digressed. . . . For the sake of your future, I would recommend that you not subconsciously stare at a girl’s chest while speaking with me. People will get the wrong idea.’

Only after hearing Freed’s words did I finally realized that while I was lost in thought talking to Freed, my gaze was on that girl’s chest the entire time....

I tried to smooth it over with my most brilliant smile and explained, “Ah~~ my bad, I was just thinking of something else”

“Something else?” The girl’s voice became louder.... Embarrassed, she then took a look at me, and bashfully added, “As long as you pay me... I won’t break

our deal....”

“Ok...” Even though I didn’t understand what she meant by that, it seemed like I wasn’t hated by her.... I thought for sure that she would hate me since I had been staring at her enormous....

-----

“It went through, it went through! Now father can continue his treatment. Weird? Four million? Did you make a mistake?” The girl looked at the screen on the cash machine and was surprised that the balance read four million one thousand.

“Huh? Oh! I probably pressed the wrong number by accident. What’s done is done, so don’t worry about it.” I laughed.

Actually, I had keyed in four million on purpose. My reason was that if her father’s treatment already cost three million, what were they planning to do with the post-op therapy? I couldn’t bear to see this girl trying to make another sale and getting beaten up.

“How can this be....” The girl seemed a bit reluctant. She was brooding over the fact that I had clearly given her more than she had asked for. She was a really good girl.

After several futile attempts to return the money, her big, bright eyes darted about, and as though she finally understood my intention, she gave me a bow. At this point, over the collar of her shirt, and by sheer coincidence, I saw a deep valley....

“I’m really grateful. You’re a really good person. My father should be able to recover now.”

“Ah, that’s fantastic! Oh, that’s right, when can I pick up the merchandise? Since it costs three million, I would want to know if the product is any good.” Come to think of it, what kind of product could possibly be worth three million? Spirit? When I asked about it earlier, she was too excited to tell me the details....

No sooner had I asked about the product than her face turned beet red, and she lowered her head as she bashfully replied, “Yes... Four million.... Even though

I have no experience... I'll definitely make it worth your while." Her long and slender index fingers twirled around each other.

Even though I didn't know what my merchandise had to do with her having no experience, since she said that it would worth my while, I figured that it should be a terrific product, right?

"Really? Then give it to me now, I need to go back home soon."

"Then... let's go to a hotel nearby..."

"There's no need to be secretive, you can just give it to me here."

"Right here?" The girls raise her voice several octaves higher.

"That's right? What's the matter? Is it not possible?" Why the heck did she respond so dramatically?

"B... But... There are people around."

I looked around me, and indeed, there were quite a lot of people around. From the looks of it, I had really bought something so valuable that I could get robbed in the middle of a busy street....

—————Alley

"This would do, come..." The girl's voice was trembling .

"Where are we going? Aiyah, stop messing around! Just give me the merchandise now. I've got to get home; it's getting late." I was surprised to see that the girl looked reluctant as she leaned against the wall.

"You... Not only do you want to do it outside, you also wanted me to initiate it? This..." For some reason, the girl looked a bit dejected. "I don't care anymore.... I already got paid, and he isn't like those other men...." As she was whispering to herself, she walked towards me, her eyes were twinkling with tears. Then, she extended her arms, and reached toward my pants?

"Hey, hey, hey! Y... You... What the heck are you doing?" I was stunned by the girl's behavior.

"What the... I was just following what you suggested.... to initiate...."

"Like I said, what are you trying to do? I'm only asking you to show me the

merchandise.”

“How am I supposed to take it out? You a weirdo?” The girl seemed a bit angry.

“Just take it out like so.” As an example, I took my house keys out of my pocket.

“But... That thing... How should I take it out?” The girl said, looking dejected.

“Huh?” Something that she couldn’t take out and show me, what on earth could that possibly be? I was beginning to get curious, “Erm, listen, could you tell me exactly what you are selling?”

<sup>1</sup> Please see No.3 Sister Feng at [Top 10 China Internet Figures 2010](#).

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 2 Chapter 6 – Kiss, Yorikawa Nagisa, and the Smell of Something Fishy**

“Virginity....” The girl lowered her head and replied bashfully.

“Oh! So, it’s virginity. It is indeed something that can’t be taken out.” After hearing the girl’s explanation, I nodded my head and replied. Then, I realized that something wasn’t quite right. “What?! Virginity? You.... Why the heck are you selling such a thing? You’re... You’re selling your body?”

“I... I didn’t want to... My dad’s an Earth Magician, but what can an Earth Magician do? They can only do work around construction sites...

“Oh, an Earth Magician, eh?” I sighed. In this world, one’s status in life is determined by one’s strength. I’m starting to understand the other Lin Xiang’s pain because of his lack of ability. Without any ability, there was no future....

“But what is this about?”

“He had been working in constructions for over ten years. A month ago, he couldn’t stop coughing, and eventually, he started coughing up blood. So, we went to the hospital for a check up. The check up result showed that Dad actually had [Silicosis](#), a dust disease. It was at a very severe stage so he needed

to be hospitalized and undergo surgery. Because of Dad's illness, we had sold off everything that was worth selling, but...the money we'd got was only enough to cover his hospital fees. The operation itself requires an additional three million. Even though I understand that there are very few people who practise curative magic, but, but... It can't be that expensive, right?" The girl explained.

"That's really expensive." In this magical world, whatever illness one gets, magic is medicine, and magic is good for what ails you. But, the so-called treatment, isn't it just something that can be done by a slightly more advanced curative magic? Why the heck would it be so costly? Just because the doctor thinks so highly of their magical skill?

"So, because of me not wanting to lose my dad, and with some advice from my classmates, I came here to sell myself. You said before that you don't have parents, so you must understand the pain of losing one's parents, right? The loss of my mom was already a blow to me, if I were to lose my dad too...." The girl cried after she finished explaining.

"Very true. The pain of losing one's parents – it was very difficult. And you are such a good person; you come out to find work so that you can make money to take care of your dad's illness. Even though the way you went about doing it wasn't right, you are still an obedient daughter." I consoled her.

At this time, the girl lifted her head and looked at me. She wiped away her tears and said, "Now that you know, please receive the merchandise."

"I never would have thought that I had bought a girl's first night for three million. Since we are both our parent's children and we both share that feeling of filial piety for them, let me just give you that money."

"What? You really mean it?" The girl's voice was a mixture of surprise and happiness, but right away, the gloominess resumed, "No, I cannot just simply take your money, I should only get my due."

"Really, there is no need...." Yo Miss, you're so adorable, and your body is also so... Now that I knew the truth, if I were to go to the hotel with you, I might just faint from blood loss. Besides, it was not like we're in a boyfriend and girlfriend relationship, how could we do something like this?

"No! It is important to keep one's promise, this is what my dad has taught me.

So, you have to see this through.” The girl’s expression showed her determination.

“Sss....” I sucked in a mouthful of cold air and turned to Freed, who had been helping me out with difficult situations, for advice: ‘Freed, save me! What am I suppose to do now?’

‘Just do her. You’ve already paid, what are you afraid of?’ Black dragon Yalide replied with a lascivious laugh.

Really, this guy was just being facetious again.

‘You bastard’s swearing at me again and calling me facetious? Isn’t it simply a matter of course to receive the merchandise once you have paid for it?’

‘Just give her a kiss and be done with it.’ White dragon Freed finally spoke up.

‘A kiss?’ I can kiss a girl? My lips felt a bit tingly when I thought about this.

‘Hey! How could you two just ignore me like that?’

‘Yep, just kiss her. You saw how determined she looked. Her upbringing as well as her philosophy of life are both excellent. Just ask yourself this, would any other girls do this? More than likely, they would just take your money and run, right? Also, just earlier, she was brooding over that extra million you gave her and insisted on giving it back to you.’

‘Uhh... What you said makes sense but would she accept a kiss from me?’ Without saying a word to each other, Freed and I decided to ignore Yalide’s howling, from wherever he might be.

‘You brat, I am now seriously wondering if that brain of yours is ornamental. If I were to call you stupid, your dumbassness can sometimes be quite clever; but if I were to call you smart, you can be quite foolish. Looks like, in this situation, I can only call you “brain dead”, that part of your brain that deals with feelings and emotion just doesn’t exist.... Sorry, don’t feel bad, what I mean is that, since this girl already decided to give you her first night, why would she mind getting a kiss from you?’

‘Oh yeah!!’ That was a eureka moment for me. Looks like I really am brain dead.

“Uhm, are you dissatisfied with me in some way?” The girl asked timidly.

Probably was because she saw me making that distressed expression, right?

“No, no, no, I am not dissatisfied with you in anyway, quite the opposite, I am very satisfied. You are very pretty, very adorable. You have a great body, and are a good person, but, I can’t take something like that from you....”

“Why not?” The girl’s eyes grew wide. She almost couldn’t believe I would make such a decision.

“Heh~~” I chuckled and patted her on her head. “Since ancient times, what was the most important thing for a girl? Money? Power? Those are not it. It is actually dignity, something that most girls have forgotten nowadays.” I felt sad just remembering the girls who were beckoning those men earlier.

“But... I already took your money....”

“How about this? I didn’t realize that you were selling yourself, so, let’s start our negotiation anew. Um, how about you let me kiss that adorable cheek of yours? I feel that it’s well worth the four, three million. “

“But....”

“But what? If you keep this up, I will have to cancel our deal. Listen, Miss, uh... fellow student, this kind of thing, a person can only do it with someone they like, understand?”

I was not sure if it was because she heard that I was going to renege on our deal or if it was because of some other reasons but she froze on the spot and looked me with a strange gaze... and then said, “Um, I’ll remember your teachings. Then... “ She then closed her eyes.

“Mn, here I come....”

I tried to calm down my heartbeat, as I slowly inched towards that incredibly adorable face. I thought I was going to faint when I was about 10 centimeters away from her.

Can I just not kiss her? Can’t I just run away? After all, she doesn’t know who I am. Ugh.... Forget it! She stood by her principles so I can’t just simply run away. Besides, I can just kiss her forehead. As I spoke, I closed my eyes too, and quickly

moved towards the girl's forehead.... It was very soft; that was strange – how could her forehead be that soft? And it was a bit wet, and warm....

As I opened my eyes and sneaked a peek, I saw the girls staring at me with her big, round eyes; and my eyes were at the same level as hers.

At the same level? If this is the case, then wouldn't what I just kissed be....

"Sorry, sorry, I'm really really sorry! I don't know what had happened; I didn't do it on purpose." I quickly took a few steps back and apologized to the girl as I was about to wipe my lips with my hand.

Freed immediately stopped me, 'Kid, don't do that! You would hurt the girl's feelings if you were to wipe your lips with your hands.'

'Uh.... Is it that serious?' After hearing what Freed said, I decided against my initial impulse; instead, I licked my lips with my tongue.... Hey! Isn't this even worse?

The girl's face turned beet red, her eyes opened big and wide; she looked like she was in a state of shock – this made me a bit scared: I wouldn't be called someone who couldn't keep his promise and took advantage of others, right? Moreover, would people think that I was some sort of pervert by the way I licked my lips? Granted, even though I could say that I wasn't going to keep my words, and planned to kiss her forehead instead of her face, I was pretty sure that I was aiming for her forehead when I planted my kiss, how did it end up being on her soft lips?

"No, it's not a big deal, not a big deal.... Since you can still say that you have taken away my first time, I actually feel better about it...." The girl kept shaking her head as she replied.

Feeling embarrassed, neither of us spoke, until the experienced Freed instructed me on how to break the silence, "You... what's your name?"

"Yorikawa...Nagisa.... You?"

"Lin Xiang...."

"Y... you are the one whom everyone called trash Lin Xiang? Oh, I'm sorry, I didn't mean it."

“It’s a fact, so don’t worry about it.” Looks like my reputation precedes me, even people I don’t know have heard about me.

Because of the girl’s apologies, we fell into awkward silence again.

“Anyway, you... are a student? How did you even hear about me?”

“You and I are in the same year, but I am in the class next to the class next to you, class A.”

“Oh, so that’s how it is. Anyway, it’s getting late, shall we head back? Also..., next time you run into trouble, you can come find me, just don’t come out here again.”

“Girls like me are no good, right?”

“Why do you say that?”

“Be... because of money, I even...”

I patted Nagisa on her head, “No, girls like you are very good. Oh... I’m referring to your dutifulness and respectfulness towards your parents. When you think about it, what you are doing, it was for your dad’s sake, so isn’t that extraordinary? Even though the way you went about it was wrong, I still really admire you.”

After hearing my words, Nagisa looked a bit embarrassed, “Thank you! If... If you don’t mind, would you like to have this?” As she spoke, she took out something that looked like a charm from her pocket.

“This is?”

“This is a charm that I made myself, for my dad; I made an extra one. Even though it isn’t worth much, I hope that... you’ll accept it.”

“A charm that you made yourself?” I took the charm from Nagisa, and noticed that it was rather intricate; and I can feel her tenderness and gentleness exuding from it, “This is really great. I like it; thank you. Then, it’s getting late, let me see you home.” Since I had come this far, I might as well make sure that she got home safe.

“Mn, thank you. You are really a good person.”

How can I be a good person? This girl's first kiss....

-----

“So, next time, if you run into any trouble, you have to come find me.” On the way home, Nagisa and I chatted; I felt like we had grown closer, felt like she and I were like friends already.

“Will do....” Nagisa thanked me over and over again, before walking into her house.

I watched and made sure Nagisa went inside her house, before I turned around and headed home.

‘Pffft.... You brat, can’t believe that there are still humans like you in the world.’

‘What do you mean by that?’

‘What I am saying is that boys like you have already gone extinct; but it’s exactly because of this that those girls would be troubled in the future...’

‘Those girls? Who are you referring to? Satsuki? Little Silent?’

‘No... there are many more girls; if I tell you now, you’d probably won’t think much of it. I’ll tell you when you get so tangled up with girls that you are about to vomit blood.’

‘Your words... sound too philosophical; but, sorry, brain dead people like me don’t get it. Besides, I don’t know that many girls, so rest assured, I won’t get so tangled up that I would throw up blood.’

‘Doesn’t matter, you’ll know soon enough, you just take your time now and enjoy your freedom.’

‘Anyway, Freed, doesn’t she possess some sort of power from the goddess of fortune? Why would she be so unfortunate, having to go....’

‘Who said she wasn’t fortunate? Didn’t she just get extremely lucky?’

‘How could she be lucky? Having to sell herself, then almost getting beaten up, and even let me take away...’

‘Err... You just keep on believing that she is unfortunate then.’

————— Classroom

”Stupid Lin Xiang!”

”What?” I lifted my head, and took a quick glance at Satsuki, who was leaning on my desk, just inches away from me.

”Did you do something bad yesterday? Why is it that you have such deep, dark circles under your eyes?”

”No... I didn’t, you...you are overthinking this.” To be honest, I was having trouble sleeping last night; I really couldn’t forget the touch of Nagisa’s lips. I had been thinking about it all night. Were all girls’ lips were that soft, that sweet?

”Something smells fishy here.” Satsuki leaned over, and sniffed around me with her nose. I could feel her breath on my ear, and that made me feel a bit strange; particularly with what had happened last night. Seeing those alluring lips on Satsuki’s tiny mouth, it even crossed my mind to wonder: what would Satsuki’s lips feel like?

”It’s all in your head, in your head. And don’t stand so close, don’t stand so close.”

Satsuki sized me up in a peculiar way, and whispered in my ear, ”Your face is so red, were you thinking of doing something bad to me?”

”How did you.... No, I wasn’t.” Almost said the wrong thing.

”Oh, it’s not a big deal – we’re good sisters, after all; you can tell me what you were just thinking of doing to me, so I can think about it and if I think it’s alright, then, there won’t be any problems.”

Crap! After hearing what Satsuki said, I felt even more strongly about it. But, did Satsuki’s brain short circuit itself somewhere? Even she herself had said that it were something bad that I might be thinking about, how could she even say that?

”I was just thinking, can you please stop leaning so close to me. Even though we are sisters, we are still a boy and a girl, right?”

”Hmm? Bizarre? You finally realized that we are a boy and a girl? Very

suspicious.... Quickly, tell me, did something happened yesterday?”

“Nothing happened, really, you’ve got to believe me.”

“Mmhmm~~~ It’s fine if you don’t wanna tell me. Tomorrow’s June 20 – I need to go get some books on spirits for my club activities. So, today, you need to come with me to buy some books.”

“Not a problem, not a problem; so long as you would stop leaning so close to me, I’ll do whatever you say.”

I couldn’t help but think that today, my feelings towards Satsuki was a bit out of whack....

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 2 Chapter 6.5 – Yorikawa Nagisa’s Side Story**

“I am very sorry; your father has Silicosis, a dust disease.” The result from the check up at the hospital came back. The nurse read the diagnosis off of the lab report and told me that.

I was shocked when I heard the news; Dad, who had been standing next to me, looked hollow-eyed after hearing the news.

Silicosis was caused by breathing in tiny silica dust particulates over prolonged period of time, leading to widespread fibrosis that resulted in pulmonary nodules in the lungs.

This type of disease has a high incidence rate among those in construction sites, where construction workers could breathe in large quantities of dust particles.... There were similar cases like this among Dad’s colleagues, and when they passed away as a result of improper treatments, at the time, I was secretly grateful that it wasn’t Dad; but now....

When I thought about this, I cried. Dad was clearly a good and honest person, and I myself hadn’t done anything bad, why would something like this happen to us?

Even though Dad kept consoling me, telling me that it wasn’t a big deal, he

couldn't hide the despair that was so clearly visible in his eyes.

The doctor suggested to put Dad under observations in the hospital and to go through some simple treatments first, before deciding whether he should undergo surgery.

In truth, it wasn't so much that they had to wait and see if the surgery was required, but rather, they were concerned that we couldn't afford it, right?

So, I let Dad sell off everything that was worth selling in the house. At the beginning, he was reluctant; but, after my incessant pleadings, he finally agreed to it.

Only after we had sold off all of our valuables and paid the hospital fees did that doctor give us a smile and tell us the prognosis: my dad's condition was actually quite stable, and could undergo surgery. Unfortunately, the surgery would cost three million – this made us feel that the situation was all but hopeless. However, I couldn't lose Dad; so long as the surgery could cure Dad's illness, no matter the cost, I would make sure that I get enough money for it.

Thus, began my series of part-time jobs before and after school: milk delivery just shortly after four in the morning, dishwashing at local eateries during lunch break, and clean up at restaurants in the evening until past midnight.

Even though it was very tiring, I thought that if I could just continue on and work hard, I should be able to save enough money for Dad's treatment, right?

————— A Month Later

"Excuse me, Miss, you are already a day late in paying your father's hospital fee. Also, are you guys even serious in considering having that operation?" I had just arrived at my dad's room in the hospital, when the nurse spotted me and demanded.

"Definitely... we're definitely going to have that operation. I will be getting paid in a few days, I'll be able to pay the hospital fees then. It's just that, for the surgery cost, could I...just owe you for the time being?"

"Ha? You are kidding, right, Miss? IOU? If the hospital would allow IOU, we would have shut down long ago." The nurse shook her head and left....

That's right, I was indeed going to get paid soon. But... at the rate I was going... when would I be able to make enough for the required three million?

————— Classroom

“So, as I was saying, that Lin Xiang, I don't know if he got something over Satsuki or what, but he has been together with her a lot lately...” Sitting in front of me was Kuroki Kakumi. She and several other girls were gossiping, and loudly at that.

Kuroki Kakumi was our class representative in the school's Cultural Festival Committee. She was energetic, vivacious, and she was friendly towards everyone. Except when it came to me; she seemed to have an open animosity towards me.

Maybe it's because Kitashima Daigo, a handsome guy in our class, likes me?

Since the beginning of the school year, quite a few boys had confessed their feelings to me; but I rejected every single one of them. Everyone who was rejected gave up. Everyone, except Kitashima Daigo; he was persistent and kept on insisting. I was at a loss as to what to do with him.

Meanwhile, a good friend of mine stopped by my desk and asked, “Nagi-chan, why is it that lately, I keep getting this feeling that you are tired all the time?”

“Hadzu-chan? Actually, my dad's sick.... I've been trying to think of a way to save up enough money....” I sighed.

“Does Kitashima know about this?”

“He? Why does he need to know about this?”

“Are you stupid? If you tell Kitashima, won't he just give you the money right away?”

“I don't really know him that well. Besides, since it's for my dad's treatment, I want to earn the money on my own.”

“On your own? Forget it! Let me hear it, how much your dad's treatment is gonna cost.”

I stuck out three fingers, and Hadzu-chan laughed, “What the heck? It's only thirty thousand – you guys can't even afford that much?”

I shook my head.

“It’s not thirty thousand? It isn’t three hundred thousand, is it? If that’s the case, it is kind of expensive.” I shook my head still. Now, Hadzu-chan began to look a bit nervous, “You...aren’t talking about three million, are you?”

I sighed and said, “Yeah.”

“OH, GOD. Then I think even Kitashima won’t be able to help you. Even though his family is quite wealthy with their net worth over several billions, he would still be hard-pressed to ask his dad for three million to help with your dad’s treatment.”

“Yeah, that’s why I said I had to make it on my own; who else would give me three million for free?”

At this time, Kuroki Kakumi turned around and said, “So, if you were to earn the money yourself, how long do you think you would need to earn enough for three million?”

“I don’t know....” It looks like she had overheard our conversation.

“I do have a good idea....” Kuroki Kakumi said that she had thought of a good idea. But doesn’t she hate me? Why would she help me?

“What idea? Tell me.”

“Um... let’s talk about it somewhere else, okay? There’s people around and this is something that should be said in private. Come, follow me.” Kuroki Kakumi stood up and walked towards the door.

“Don’t bother with her, please? Nagi-chan, don’t go, class is about to start.” Hadzu-chan pleaded.

“No worries, no worries, you just wait here for me. I’ll be right behind you.” Hadzu-chan tugged on my uniform, signaling me not to go; but if Kuroki Kakumi really had a good idea, what was the harm in hearing her out?

————— Rooftop

Right when we were about to step onto the rooftop, Kamiki Kuji, the class monitor from class C, passed by us and headed downstairs.

“Kamiki Kuji? What was she doing here? Also, the one who went downstairs right before, wasn’t it trash Lin Xiang? Could it be that they have some sort of relationship?” After Kuroki Kakumi mumbled to herself for a bit, she turned towards me and said, “I feel that you are really quite pitiful; that’s why I called you up here. As for my idea, I want to clarify beforehand that I have never tried it myself; it was from a girl friend of mine who’d tried it, you got that, right? I have never tried it out myself.”

“Okay.” An idea that you haven’t tried out yourself? What exactly are you trying to say?

“Let me ask you this first, in your own opinion, the way you go about it with your part time jobs, do you think you can save enough for three million?”

“No.” I shook my head.

“Then, what I am about to tell you, is a way that can get you rich instantly.”

“What is it?”

“Let me ask a question first. You’re still a virgin right?”

“I...” Why the heck was she asking such a question? Even though I had my doubts, I replied, “Yes, I am.”

“Really? Looking at those big breasts of yours, I thought for sure that they got big from having all sorts of guys rub them.” Kuroki Kakumi seemed to be disappointed that I was a virgin.

“Please... please don’t say such a thing, okay?” It wasn’t like I wanted to have large breasts.... Besides, because of them, you guys were always teasing me, saying I was like a dairy cow.

“Fine, fine, fine; you really are pure and innocent. Humph, alright, you can now take this opportunity and be all you can be with your purity and innocence. “

“You...what are you saying?”

“What I am saying is my idea; you can sell your virginity and become some rich guy’s mistress.”

“You... what did you say?” This... how could you call this a good idea?

“Oh? Your face even turns red, you’re such an eyesore! Anyway, it’s not like you’ll make that much money and your dad needs his operation soon. So besides doing this or robbing banks, what other brilliant get rich quick scheme can you think of?”

“No... I don’t want to....”

“It’s up to you; you should really think long and hard on it – with your part time jobs, you would never make enough money to save your dad.”

“But...” I gave it some thought, and the reality indeed was.... But... to be some uncle’s mistress... I really couldn’t accept that.

As though she could read my mind, Kuroki Kakumi suggested, “You can just do it once. Look at you, you look so adorable — aren’t you very popular with the boys? Besides, you’re like our school’s prima donna. If you think about it, such a pretty girl, and a virgin no less – you never know, one of those rich men might find you interesting and after spending a night with you, may just up and give you three million to treat your dad.”

I was tempted; I knew I was kind of pretty, kind of cute, and if it really worked out like Kuroki Kakumi suggested, if I got some rich man interested in me and for just doing it once, up and gave me three million, then, wouldn’t it be enough to save Dad? This body was a gift from Dad; Mom is gone, and I really can’t lose Dad....

“Mn, it looks to me like you’ve made your decision. Then, head over to Fukuda Avenue tonight. There, you’ll see a lot of other girls looking for customers; you can just copy what they do. You can decide for yourself how much to ask for. Well, that was the bell, let’s head back then.”

————— After School

“Nagi-chan, hurry up and tell me what you and Kuroki talked about. You weren’t paying attention in class at all today.”

“Sorry, I really can’t tell you....” How could I say it out loud... that I was going to sell myself? I picked up my book bag and ran out of the classroom, ignoring Hadzu’s chan’s screams and left her behind.

I am really sorry, Hadzu-chan.

————— Evening

“Little girl, how much??” An uncle walked over, stood in front of me, and asked.

“Th... three”

“Three thousand?”

“Three million....”

The moment I said it, the man laughed, “Little girl, actually, I have been watching you for a while now. Please don’t joke around with me, otherwise, I’ll make like all those other guys before and leave, okay?”

“No, really.... It’s really three million....”

“Little girl, you sure?”

“Yes.”

“Then forget it.... With that price, I’d suggest that you go on home; there’s no way anyone would give you three million.” After he said it, the uncle left.

This was already the 13th guy who left after hearing the price.

Meanwhile, another older man walked over; he was bald and he stank of alcohol.

“Girlie, how much?”

“Three... mil... million.”

“Eh? I’m not hearing things right?” That older man seemed a bit displeased.

“That’s right, it’s three million.”

“Who do you think you are? You want three million? You think you’re some kinda angel?” I felt a bit embarrassed with this man yelling and screaming at me like this so I lowered my head.

“That... my dad’s sick, need money, so....”

“I don’t care if your family is sick, the most I can give is three hundred thousand.” The bald man said fiercely.

“No... No... This is my first time... Furthermore... It’s because my father is sick,

that's why I..." How could I? Three hundred thousand? That would mean I had to do this ten times? If this were the case, then I'd rather die together with Dad.

"A little slut like you dares to bargain with me? So what if it's your first time?" That man was furious, and in his anger, he lifted his hand and was about to hit me; in that instant, a dark shadow suddenly appeared in front of me, and caught that older man's hand. When I lifted up my head and took a good look at the man's hand where it was caught, it was all red. The man's face looked like he was in great deal of pain.

"Bullying a girl, do you even consider yourself a man? You're already this old, and you even went so far as to hit a 16 or 17 year old girl, in the middle of the streets no less. Do you have no shame?" Hearing the voice, the other person was a boy?

"Little brat, what does that have to do with you? I'm her customer, I do what I want to do."

No, I hadn't agreed to it, right?

Just when I was about to open my mouth and refute it, the boy said, "In that case, you can get lost. I'm her customer now." Then, he swung his arm around, and that older man could barely steady himself. He glared at the boy, "You stinking brat, you're her customer? Fine! You cherry boy can be her customer, I'm leaving." He then turned around, pointed at me, yelled at me for a bit, and left.

That boy took a glance at the back of that older man as he was leaving, then he turned towards me. I was so scared that I hurried to lower my head.

"What are you selling?" He asked.

"I'm.... I'm not doing sales, but if you're talking about sales, I guess it counts as well?" Could it be that the boy was trying to ask if I was a virgin?

"Err.... Your answer's really confusing.... How about this? Whatever you are selling, I'll buy it."

"Really?" He would buy it? For three million? Is this for real or was I hallucinating?

Once he took an absentminded glance at my chest, he gave a resolute reply, “Really, I am speaking the truth.”

“Bu... But it’s three million...” Judging from his appearance, he should still be a student like me, right?

“Well..., it’s true that it’s a bit expensive, but it doesn’t matter. I don’t mind telling you this, I, er, I have no parents.”

So, he was an orphan. Even though my mom was gone, I still have my dad.

“I’m really sorry about this, but why... help me? So it really was because...” He really was attracted to me, right? “But there are plenty of girls out there who are bigger and are cuter than me. Even if I’m an Intermediate Magician, isn’t three million a bit too much?”

“Well... Even though I don’t understand what you’re thinking, I just want you to know that since I’ve lost my parents, I understand the pain of losing them, and I envy people who still have theirs. So I don’t want you to lose your father. That’s all.”

This boy in front of me was indeed a really kind person; how could there be a boy like him?

I was really moved by his words, so moved that my pathetic tears couldn’t help but stream down from my eyes, “You... you really are a kind person....”

For some reason, the boy started to panic, and said, “Let’s go, let’s go. Let’s go to the bank. Do you have a bank card?”

“Mn, mn, mn. I do, I do.” This was great, that I would have enough money for dad’s treatment – when I thought about this, I smiled.

When he saw my smile, the boy suddenly stopped and just kept staring at my face.... After a while, he forced a smile and said, “Ah~~ my bad, I was just thinking of something else.”

“Something else? “ At this point, it came back to me, that after I had accepted payment, he and I would have to....

“As long as you pay me... I won’t break our deal....”

-----

“It went through, it went through! Now father can continue his treatment. Weird? Four million? Did you make a mistake?” My bank account only had one thousand, and I only asked him for three million, how did it end up with four million?

“Huh? Oh! I probably pressed the wrong number by accident. What’s done is done, so don’t worry about it.” He laughed.

“How can this be...?” You didn’t want it because you pressed the wrong number? This wouldn’t do, I said I only wanted three million from you.

“Please hurry up and take it back.”

“Like I said, no need.”

“But why?”

“Because it’s too much trouble?”

“Too much trouble?” There were people who would think that it was too much trouble to make money? Wait a minute, this boy was acting a bit strange. Just then, when he was transferring me the money, it looked like he was pondering about something. Maybe he did it on purpose? If it was just three million, that would only cover the cost of the surgery for Dad’s illness. But, wouldn’t Dad still need post-op therapy after the surgery? We had already sold off all the valuables in the house. If we had an extra million, it would solve a lot of these problems....

“I’m really grateful. You’re a really good person. My father should be able to recover now.”

“Ah, that’s fantastic! Oh, that’s right, when can I pick up the merchandise? Since it costs three million, I would want to know if the product is any good.”

That’s right..., he had spent quite a bit of money for my first night... from the original three million to the four million; this had far exceeded my expectations, “Yes... Four million.... Even though I have no experience... I’ll definitely make it worth your while.”

“Really? Then give it to me now, I need to go back home soon.”

It looked as though he planned to split after it was over....

“Then... let’s go to a hotel nearby...”

“There’s no need to be secretive, you can just give it to me here.”

“Right here?” What was this boy saying? Right out here in the public? He had a rather unusual hobby?

“That’s right? What’s the matter? Is it not possible?”

You might be progressive and is open to it, but I’m not: “B... But... There are people around.”

“Oh, then, you can take me to a place where you feel comfortable with then.”

So, in order to satisfy his unusual taste, I brought him to a desolate alleyway.

Argh, I couldn’t believe that my first time would be done out in the open like this....

I took a deep breath, braced myself against the wall, and said, ““This would do, come...”

“Where are we going? Aiyah, stop messing around! Just give me the merchandise now. I’ve got to get home; it’s getting late.”

“You... Not only do you want to do it outside, you also wanted me to initiate it? This...” This boy was really.... Forget it, since I had already took the money, I would just do what he said.

Who knew that right when I was about to reach over and undo his pants, he screamed, and asked me what the heck I was doing....

-----

Later, after some explanations, we realized that we had both misunderstood each other.

“Now that you know, please receive the merchandise.”

“I never would have thought that I had bought a girl’s first night for three million. Since we are both our parent’s children and we both share that feeling of filial piety for them, let me just give you the money.”

“What? You really mean it?” Wouldn’t this be like giving me the money for free? No, no, I couldn’t do that, it would be like breaking our deal, “No, I cannot just simply take your money, I should only get my due.”

“Really, there is no need....” Did this count as him rejecting me?

“No! It is important to keep one’s promise, this is what my dad has taught me. So, you have to see this through.”

The moment I said that, he became quiet, and stared at me for a long time with a look of distress on his face....

“Uhm, are you dissatisfied with me in some way?” Why is it that when I said it like that, it sounded as though I was the one who wanted to do it?

“No, no, no, I am not dissatisfied with you in anyway, quite the opposite, I am very satisfied. You are very pretty, very adorable. You have a great body, and are a good person, but, I can’t take something like that from you....”

“Why not?” Wasn’t this boy a bit too weird? He declined even when I insisted on giving it to him? Particularly when he had already paid in advance?

“Heh~~.” He gave a hearty laugh, then stroked my head gently, and said, “Since ancient times, what is the most important thing for a girl? Money? Power? Those are not it. It is actually dignity, something that most girls have forgotten nowadays.”

His gentle touch and his speech made me realize my mistake; but in order to not lose Dad, this was the only thing I could do. Besides, I couldn’t very well just take his money, right?

“But... I already took your money....”

“How about this? I didn’t realize that you were selling yourself, so, let’s start our negotiation anew. Um, how about you let me kiss you on your adorable cheek? I feel that it’s well worth the four, three million. “

“But....” Could a kiss on the cheek be worth four million?

“But what? If you keep this up, I will have to cancel our deal. Listen, Miss, uh... fellow student, this kind of thing, a person can only do it with someone he/she likes, you get that, right?”

This kind of thing, a person can only do it with someone they like, understand?

His words etched into my heart. This boy in front of me... really was extraordinary. “Um, I’ll remember your teachings. Then....” Having said that, I

closed my eyes.

“Mn, here I come....” He replied. But then there was a long pause, with no action of any sort?

I lifted my head and opened my eyes, about to ask what he was doing; who knew right at that moment, his face, just inches away from me, quickly moved in.

In a brief moment, my brain just went blank, and my whole body had this strange tingling sensation coursing through it. He... kissed me, he kissed me on my lips, right when I was about to open my mouth and speak.

We were like this for maybe a few seconds, then he quickly backed away, “Sorry, sorry, I’m really really sorry! I don’t know what had happened; I didn’t do it on purpose.”

But after he said that, he used his tongue to lick his lips? W... was he savoring this? And here I was, thinking that he wasn’t interested in me....

“No, it’s not a big deal, not a big deal.... Since you can still say that you have taken away my first time, I actually feel better about it....” If it was you..., I was alright with it.

————— Home

When I thought back on it, it almost felt like a dream.

Lying in my bed, I thought about how Lin Xiang and I met, and how we had misunderstood each other... It was kind of hilarious.

He and I, could we count ourselves as friends? I couldn’t help but stroke my lips a little, feeling as though his warmth still lingered on around them....

Anyway, I really haven’t spoken with a boy like this before. I was normally a bit shy around boys. Could it be because that he gave off a familiar feeling?

I shook my head, and buried my face in the pillow; my mind kept going through what had happened earlier: his awkwardness, his surprise, his smile, and his kiss..., I didn’t know why, but I felt all warm and fuzzy inside, this should be because I had met someone as kind as him, right?

While thinking of that kind person Lin Xiang, I fell asleep very quickly.

## **Volume 2 Chapter 7 – Bookstore, Forbidden Books, and the Original Blockhead**

“Hrng~~ Mnn~~~ Ahh~~~” It was the end of class. Satsuki stretched herself in front of me. Looking at her curvaceous figure, I couldn’t help but marvel to myself: Satsuki has a really fantastic body.

“Hey, stupid Lin Xiang, why the heck are you gawking at me with such a lecherous stare? Are you planning to do something that goes beyond our sisterly relationship?”

“Aren’t you overthinking this?” It appeared that Satsuki saw through me when I stole that quick glance at her body.

“Really? Then...”

“Hey, what? What the heck are you doing?”

All of a sudden, in the middle of our conversation, Satsuki wrapped her arms around my neck and drew her face closer and closer...

“Your face is all red. You are overthinking this, right? It’s just us sisters, what are you being all shy about?”

“Uhh....” Shit! She got me.

“Hehe... I love seeing you looking all embarrassed like that. Come on, let’s go get those books. Tomorrow’s Spirit Summoning Day.” Satsuki picked up her book bag and hit me with it.

“I say.... What kind of spirits do you think you’ll be able to summon?”

“I don’t know. How about you?”

“He~~” I gave a confident laugh. Who am I? I’d be what you would call a dragonkin; be it superior spirit or a special spirit, wouldn’t they all come running?

‘Don’t get too cocky, the summoner’s spiritual strength determines the kind of spirits they can summon.’ Just when I was getting excited, Freed had to come

out and rain on my parade.

‘You’re not trying to tell me, that I wouldn’t be able to summon any, are you?’

‘Well, that....’

‘Oi, even though I can’t see your expression, could you please refrain from sounding like you’re being put in a difficult spot and can’t really answer my question?’

‘Alright, according to my prediction, based on your spiritual strength, you should, perhaps, maybe, possibly, can manage to summon a spirit of the lowest rank? Meh~~~ Just believe in yourself.’

‘Hey, wait a minute, what is the meaning of your multitudes of “maybes”?’  
Percentage multiplied by percentage? (Like  $90\% \times 90\% = 81\%$ ?)

If that really was the case, then wouldn’t my chance of summoning any spirits be very low? Never mind them being the lowest ranked spirits.

‘Ugh, kid, didn’t you know, that it was like a one in a million chance for you, a Trainee Magician, with strength only at the level of a junior high student, to make it into high school? Who isn’t at least a Junior Magician in high school already? Besides, you all are still only freshmen. There are still plenty of room to grow. Oh, when I said “you all”, that doesn’t include you, by the way.’

‘Dammit. You can just say it to my face directly that my spiritual strength is so low that I won’t be able to summon any spirits. Why the heck do you have to make fun of me in such a roundabout way? Saying that my strength is only that of a junior high student....’

‘Oh? Making fun of you? So do you know any special killer moves? You weren’t thinking of saying that since you had the dragons’ power, it would be equivalent to having amazing spiritual power, and could do a lot of powerful magic? It would get out of control, and people, whoever they might be, will get hurt. What kind of magical power is that then? On top of that, while I’ll admit that your sword skills are pretty good, can you manage to summon spirits with your sword skill?’

‘That, I cannot.’ Freed wasn’t pulling any punches.

‘Well, kid, don’t be so depressed; if you really want to have a powerful spirit then you can convert your dragons’ power into spiritual power. I believe that if you can do that, it won’t matter whether they are spirit kings or what not, they will all heed your summon and come running.’

‘All...will answer my summon? Then, wouldn’t the school get so crowded that it might explode?’ Do know that the spirit population isn’t any less than the human population.

‘So, either you be someone who can’t summon any of the spirits, or be someone who can summon all of them. Your choice. Besides, if you really were to summon other spirits, and form a contract with them, wouldn’t that make the ones who came here first, the water spirit and the lowest ranked earth spirit unhappy? ‘

‘Why?’

‘Forget it, forget that I said anything. I’ve already explained it so clearly, and you still don’t understand, you really are brain dead.’

‘But...’

‘Hey, brain dead, don’t keep talking to me. The human girl Satsuki, is about to get scared half to death by you. A minute ago, you were just giving her a charming smile, then all of a sudden, you stopped talking and got all depressed and looked like you were about to cry.’

‘Oh?’

When I snapped myself back to reality, I noticed that Satsuki was standing there, spinning her wheels, and looking really anxious. When she saw that I had finally recovered, she quickly said, “I’m sorry, I’m sorry, Lin Xiang. It’s just spirits, no need to dwell on it.”

“Nah, I was thinking about something else just now. I wasn’t worrying about whether I could summon spirits.” In truth, I was worrying about it.

“But...”

“Okay, let’s head to the bookstore.” I picked up my book bag, patted Satsuki on her head, and led us out of the classroom.

————— Kamiki Bookstore

Kamiki Bookstore is an enormous organization that sells all sorts of books. It is an understatement to call it a bookstore as its size rivals that of most libraries.

“Excuse me, could you tell me where I could find reference books on spirits?” Satsuki asked the young woman at the Information Desk right when we walked into the bookstore. After all, the place was simply too large.

“Good day. All reference books on spirits are located in Section D. Please feel free to peruse the area for the books that you may like.”

“Thank you.” After Satsuki uttered a polite reply to the young woman, she dragged me over to Section D.

“Oh... There are so many of them here.” When she saw the many different varieties of books that filled the enormous bookshelves, Satsuki was a bit stumped.

“Aren’t they all the same? Just randomly pick one, and let’s be on our way.”

“They aren’t all the same, alright? Each professor on spirits has their own theory on the subject; so, their books aren’t all the same.”

“Sigh, then what should I do?”

“Just help me look around.”

Since Satsuki said it like that, I began to flip through some of these books on spirits as well.

After flipping through the books for a bit, I got bored. So, I wandered around the nearby area to see if there were any more books. Right then, behind Section D, I saw two large bookcases that had a sign with the word “18” inside a circle. And next to it was an exclamation mark?

What does that mean? People who are 18 years of age should pay attention?

I am only 17 years old, but isn’t that almost old enough to count as 18? Besides, I could see quite a few other boys who looked about my age standing over there, flipping through the books. So, with the idea of just checking things out, I went over there.

Unexpectedly, what I saw on the covers of those books weren't any spirits, but rather, beautiful females dressed up all sexy like but had some sort of horns worn on their heads?

I took a look at the title of the book: The H Lifestyle between My Master and I.

Right then, as I read the title, I could feel my hands trembling. This... could this be... the rumored forbidden books? An H-book with spirits cosplaying?

When I was in junior high, I had heard about these types of books from other boys in the class. But because I was in enough trouble all by myself already, I never managed to check them out.

And now...I was so lucky as to even lay eyes on these kinds of books, could this be Yalide's guidance?

Just when I thought of this idea, Yalide's voice came roaring from somewhere inside my head, 'Bite me! Stinky brat, how did you arrive at this theory? What do you mean "Yalide's guidance"? Why would you think that I would lead you here to read these books?'

'Ah... I apologize, I don't know why I would think like that all of a sudden....' Almost forgot that they could tell what I was thinking....

'Don't know why you would think like that? You'd better hurry up and give me a proper explanation. How could you see me, Yalide, the dragon god who was this wonderful Demon World Administrator, as some kind of lecherous dragon?'

'Uh... is that not the case?' He did advise me to do Nagisa, as I recalled.

'Shit, I...'

'Ah... Yalide, the son of darkness...' White dragon Freed's voice sounded a bit sympathetic. 'No need for you to quibble about this. Never mind him, even I, who have been with you for so many years, share the same feeling about you.... Er... an example? Like that last time, when we were just floating around, you deliberately snuck around to someone's bathroom window....'

'W... what kind of garbage are you saying? I... I wouldn't do such a thing.'

'Then, you go ahead and explain to us what you were doing at the time.'

'T... That was... That was I wanted to get a better understanding of humans.'

Yup. That's right. That was all for my getting a better understanding of humans, so I wanted to observe them in their most natural state.'

'Oh~~ so that's how it was. I get it now. You needed to understand human females in their most natural states – say no more; I understand you perfectly. Since we all share the same body with you, you can rest assured that we won't reject you.'

'Thank you.... Thank your mother! I really wasn't.... '

'Oi, oi. No need to explain further. Yalide, we understand.' I chuckled.

'Kid, never mind him now; you'd better watch it yourself. If you keep on like this, staring at the cover of this book with that blank expression on your face, the consequences... will be a bit less than desirable.'

When I turned around, I saw Satsuki glaring at me, with her hands on her hips....

"Yo! Satsuki... been a while." For some unknown reason, I came up with such an idiotic line.

"Mn, been a while, been such a long while that you're all grown up."

"Oh, hah...." I gave her a wry smile. "Actually, I was thinking, clearly, this area should only have reference books on spirits, why is it that they would have these kinds of books around? I am telling you, I seriously despise people who read these kinds of books."

"Oh yeah? Aren't you wonderful?! I wonder who exactly it was just now getting so engrossed in reading these books that he even smiled to himself." Satsuki snatched the book from my hand, took a look at the cover, then pointed at the spirit cosplaying female on the cover art and asked, "So that's your type?"

"No, no." Shit! I was like a mute who had swallowed a bitter pill – couldn't help but suffer in silence. It looked like I was engrossed in it only because I was talking to Freed and them and got lost in our conversation.... Alright, I'd admit it, I did have an urge to buy this book a moment ago. But that was because I had never seen it before. It was completely out of curiosity.

I wanted to tell Satsuki all about it so badly, but she looked like she was

thinking about something else.

“Hey, do you know Yorikawa Nagisa?” On our way back, Satsuki asked me out of the blue.

“...No...not really?”

“Not really? If not really, then why was she staring at you when we were leaving?”

“Really?” I didn’t see that at all. Besides, did Nagisa really show herself in front of me? How come I didn’t see her? “You probably saw the wrong person, right?”

“It’ll be for the best if that’s the case. It looks to me like people have already started noticing you....”

“Really? Am I that great? Hahah! Then again, who noticed me? You?”

“Sigh~~~” Satsuki looked me and sighed. Then, she mumbled to herself, “After all, I was here first, and its a blockhead too. It can’t possibly be snatched away, right?”

“You’re going to snatch a block of wood? Wood needs to be stolen? Can’t you just get a block of wood for several hundred?” Just what kind of wooden block is it that you needed to go snatch it?

“The block of wood I’m talking about is very special, the one and only in the world, I don’t want any besides that one.”

“Oh. Looks to me like it must some high quality wood.”

“Of course, it was even authenticated and recognized internationally as the Original Blockhead.”

“Oh? An original? Even wood have these kinds of distinctions? Learn something new every day.”

(TL: blockhead and wood look and sound the same in Chinese.)

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

**Volume 2 Chapter 8 – Extraordinary Thought Process, Contract, Commencing**

## Summoning

“Master, dinner is ready.” As usual, Silent Water was sweet and congenial – I simply liked her.

Tomorrow’s Spirit Summoning Day. If... if there is someone with such an immense amount of spirit strength that even Silent Water would be.... Oh! I don’t even want to imagine what life would be like without Silent Water.

“Master, is something the matter with you? You don’t look so well.”

“Nothing, nothing.” I let out a soft sigh.

“Master, are you worrying about something?”

“No. I was just thinking, given my ability, if I can summon any spirits tomorrow.”

“Master is so awesome, I am sure you can! But...”

“But what?” Silent Water rarely had this kind of despondent expression.

“After spirit summoning comes contract forming, right?”

“Yeah... What about it?”

Silent Water shook her head, “I.... Never mind, nothing really.... Master, let’s dig in.”

“No...Silent Water, didn’t you have something you wanted to say?”

“No, I just thought, if I could just stay here, that would be enough.”

What a strange thing to say? When Silent Water answered my question, I felt like there was something off about her? It was like she was a bit sad?

On the other hand, if Silent Water didn’t want to say it, I had no reason to force her....

After dinner, rather than sitting down with me and watching TV in the living room like we usually do, Silent Water quickly returned to her room – this made me feel a bit weird.

————— Bed

‘Kid, let me tell you this in advance, be mentally prepared – if you can’t

summon any spirits tomorrow, you need not feel too bad about it. Hey, kid...um? Are you worrying about the water spirit's strange behavior earlier today?'

'Yeah, compared to normal, today Silent Water felt a bit off.'

'Alright, I am gonna give it to you straight – that water spirit, she wants to form a contract with you.'

'For real?' My heart leapt for joy when I heard what Freed said.

'Of course it's for real. That was what I was trying to tell you earlier this afternoon; that if you were to form a contract with another spirit, the water spirit and all would feel terrible about it.'

'Really? So, Silent Water wanted to be my spirit...' Thinking about this made me really happy; but thinking more on this made me feel deflated, 'Forget it, my power is so weak, there is no way Silent Water would want me. She must think that because she is living here... In the future, I'm sure she'll find a master that would benefit her.'

'Argh! I just know it... your thought process is just extraordinary...'

'My thought process is extraordinary? What does that mean?'

'It means nothing, you...I really don't know what to say...forget it, this should also be one of your good points.'

————— Morning

Today was June 20th.

On this day, the human world would be surging with spiritual energy – a particularly good day for contracting spirits. Because of this, high schools pick this day as the Spirit Summoning Day. As such, June 20th is also called the National Contracting Day.

Even though the spirits summoned during the summoning ceremony would be "wild", this summoning relies on having both parties responding positively to each other, so there shouldn't be any incident where the spirits would get out of control.

Moreover, after a person has contracted with a spirit, they can continue to contract more; the number of spirits a person can contract is proportional to

one's power. That is the reason why there are spirit shops around.

And now, whenever I see Silent Water, I got the feeling that I wanted to keep her for myself – it was all because of what Freed told me last night, that Silent Water wished to form a contract with me. Because I simply liked her too much, I didn't want her to leave my side – I wanted her to be my familiar.

Unfortunately for me, aside from my sacred fire, that suicidal ability of mine, I didn't have any other skills; even though I possessed an enormous amount of magical power, I was useless. The root of the problem was that I was just too weak.

If a weakling like me were to form a contract with Silent Water, I would just drag Little Silent down. Honestly, while possessing dragons' abilities has given me sufficient magical power, I don't have any other skills beyond that. Like it was explained before, the spirits would provide support to the summoner during a battle; if Silent Water were to become my spirit, then she would become the main offensive power while I would be a mere bystander, just standing by the sideline and watching her fight.... This was not what I would like to see.

When I thought of this, my feeling of wanting to keep her all to myself vanished.

After breakfast, I noticed that Silent Water didn't look too well. From the looks of it, her magical power must have been almost depleted. So, I walked up to her and gave her a hug....

The normal Silent Water would stand there patiently to wait for her power to be replenished; but today, after her power was replenished, Silent Water held me tight and wouldn't let go – suddenly, I panicked and didn't know what to do.

“Silent Water... you... what are you doing? Let go.”

“Sorry, master, Silent Water can't do that....”

“Why not?” Could it really be like what Freed said, that Silent Water wanted to form a contract with me? To be honest, I was actually very happy about it, but...I shouldn't be a burden to her ....

“Master, shouldn't you know this by now? Silent Water has already been calling you 'master' for a while now; have you not accepted me yet?” Silent

Water voice was quivering.

“I...I can't burden you.”

“Master, why would you think that?”

So, while enjoying the body heat from Silent Water, I told her my thoughts on the whole thing, “You know, my ability is very weak, and I only have one skill... a skill I can't use often at that.... Essentially, someone like me is useless – I won't be able to fight. If you were to form a contract with me, then you would be dragged down by me....”

Silent Water laughed, after hearing my explanation. I could feel her warm breath on my ear, and it made me feel a bit weird.

“What are you laughing at?”

“Honestly... this way of thinking is so very much like Master.”

“No... what do you mean by this?”

“Even though, on the surface, master tends to give off a pretty laidback attitude, you actually give certain matters quite a lot of thoughts: considering the concerns of the other party, worrying about the feelings of the other party, and keeping in mind the welfare of the other party. Silent Water understands this very well. However, Master, if it weren't for you back then, would Silent Water be standing here now, enjoying the warmth from master's body? If master wasn't there, could Silent Water have avenged her parents' death? If master wasn't here, would Silent Water be able to learn about so many things? Silent Water very much likes the way things are now: to be able to prepare meals for you, to be able to clean up for you.... To tell master the truth, Silent Water has been your spirit the moment you saved her.”

“Silent Water....” I was really touched by Silent Water words. So, this was what Silent Water was thinking, but... I really... couldn't...

“Master..., are you still worrying about something?” Silent Water read my mind.

“No.... I am too weak, I would just drag you down.”

“There is no such thing and Silent Water doesn't mind. Even if Master is really

that weak, Silent Water doesn't mind. Silent Water just wants to remain by Master's side, and be Master's spirit."

"But..."

Silent Water took a step back, and stood in front of me; her beautiful face was right in front of me. She interrupted my train of thought and said, "You know, Master?"

She smiled tenderly and continued, "Yesterday, when I heard that master was going to form a contract with another spirit, for some reason, Silent Water's heart ached a bit. Silent Water thought to herself, was I really that useless? I couldn't even get Master to form a contract with me first? Now that I understand Master's concern, not only am I relieved, I am very happy. So..., please, let me become your spirit. Silent Water, by the name of the Origin of all things, pledges to stand by Master's side; serving exclusively Lin Xiang, my Master, as his familiar spirit."

She... She was reciting the pledge for the contract, right? But...

'Kid, just form the contract with her. I am being serious when I say this: you being able to meet her, was predestined by fate. You can't say that fate is something that isn't real – that is just you finding excuses for your own weakness! If you feel that you are really weak, then get stronger after you form your contract with her.'

'Freed...'

Freed's words no doubt gave me a shot of confidence. I looked right into Silent Water's bright and glistening eyes, and asked her to confirm, "Silent Water..., are you sure?"

Silent Water's eyes were very determined, "Silent Water is sure."

"Then..." After I quietly recited the pledge for the contract in my heart, I slowly moved towards Silent Water's little red, luscious lips....

When Silent Water's lips and my lips met, a soft, blue light encircled us for about five or six seconds. Then, the circle became a beam of light, and shone onto Silent Water's right arm – a blue water droplet symbol appeared and imprinted on her arm; then it slowly dissipated.

Silent Water's glittering eyes glistened with tears, "Silent Water vows to be by your side, be your sword that slays your enemies, and be your shield that protects you from your enemies' attacks."

Just like that, Silent Water became my familiar.

——— On the way to school

I couldn't say for sure whether what I did was the right thing to do or not. But, I didn't want to make Silent Water sad. Either way, I had to form a contract with a spirit anyway; this actually made us into a real family – I have to treat her well as part of the family.

The current me felt nonchalant about whether I could summon spirits. This was because I had already contracted a spirit and that was a king level spirit, Silent Water.

'Kid, you did alright. Really, only humans like you could partner up with a spirit and form a formidable pair.'

'.... I don't understand.... '

'OH~~FUCK! Excuse me for disturbing you, you just run along now and get to school.'

'Oh, I am sorry, please don't be like that. Hey, please explain it a bit. Hey.'

Freed didn't respond....

——— Classroom

"I believe everyone has been waiting for this day for a while, right?" Our homeroom teacher asked during morning class; he himself was obviously quite excited.

"Yes!!!" Everyone in the class gave the same answer, almost in unison.

"Actually, just like you all, I am also quite excited. Today is..."

Our homeroom teacher said quite a bit, before leading us towards the large assembly hall, dedicated for large assemblies.

It was estimated that the large assembly hall could hold more than three thousand people; any important meetings were held here. Because of its

spaciousness, it had also been used as a venue for some performances.

The so-called performance wasn't referring to any athletic or battle art demonstrations, but rather to the more mundane cultural arts variety, like singing, dancing, and the like.

For the moment, the assembly hall was packed full of high school freshmen. Be it boy or girl, every one of them was very anxious. Reason being, this was the long awaited fateful day when one's destiny was determined.

A spirit's rank is determined by the strength and the control of summoner's spiritual power; a strong spirit would naturally gravitate towards a summoner with strong spiritual power. So, if you were able to summon a superior level spirit, then it would be proof that you have sufficiently strong spiritual power, and an indicator of your potential for future development.

Of course, even if the spirits summoned are of lower ranks, through subsequent training, the spirits' levels can be raised.

So, a summoned spirit is oftentimes a secondary indicator of one's power.

"Ahem..." Headmaster Ijima Michita stood at the podium with his hand on the microphone and gave us some of the essential instructions on summoning spirits. Before the meeting adjourned, he added some words of encouragement. Then, following our homeroom teacher, we arrived at the open area in the school's yard.

"Well then, everybody! You all have heard what the Headmaster said just now, right? Just relax and breath normally, adjust yourself as much as you need and when you are ready, feel the spirits in the air, then slowly release your spiritual energy and summon the spirits.... Alrighty, that is it, do you all understand the instructions?"

"Understood!"

"Alright, now, let the summoning ceremony begin!"

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

**Volume 2 Chapter 9 – Spiritcon, Hot Dog, Quitting School**

The summoning ceremony had officially begun. All the freshmen in school started reciting their summoning verses, and paid full attention to their surroundings so that they could summon spirits that they would be truly compatible with.

As for how long the summoning took, that was indefinite because the spirit population was about the same, or maybe even more than the human population, so it was no easy task to find a compatible spirit among the spirit populace. Of course, to save some trouble, one could always just head to a spirit shop and buy a spirit straight from the store. But if a summoner were to do that, the relationship and the compatibility between the summoner and the spirit wouldn't be quite the same, as it would be from a summoning. After all, spirits sold in a spirit shop were captured, so, at least to some degree, it would only be natural for them to be fearful of humans. Because of this, ninety-nine percent of summoners would get their very first spirits via summoning.

Since I already have Silent Water, I obviously didn't pay much attention to the whole summoning thing... Alright, actually, it had more to do with the fact that I couldn't summon any spirits. It was quite clearly stated in our reference books that the lower level spirits, in order for them to avoid being hunted, would still pick appropriate masters for themselves, as per their own levels. So, a summoner shouldn't be without any spirit, simply because he had lower amount of spiritual energy... So why then? Why was it that when it came to summoning spirits, I just couldn't do it? I let out a sigh of resignation, and gave up on trying to summon any spirits altogether.

So while my classmates were busy focusing on summoning their own spirits, I took this opportunity to chat with Freed and Yalide to pass the time.

Soon enough, one of the boys shouted, "It came! It came! My spirit!"

Everyone looked towards where the commotion was: A boy was shouting excitedly at a small, gray squirrel that stood in the middle of a glowing magical circle.

However, when the boy found out that the squirrel was of the earth type, his excitement cooled. The reason was because its attribute was an earth type.

The boy's reaction was quite common. Spirits of the same species could be of

different types of attributes: wind, fire, water, lightning, wood, earth, metal, fog, or poison. Of all the different types of attributes, earth and wood had the lowest rankings among the elements. That was because people didn't think that these two types of attributes were very effective during battles.

But, to me, the type of attribute a spirit possessed wasn't that big of a concern; it was one's own spirit after all.

The little earth elemental squirrel belonged to the lowest class, and when it saw its master, it ran frantically towards him. I could see that boy's expression freeze at that moment. But, after a short while, he was moved by the little guy's adorableness and formed a contract with it.

That boy's contract marked the beginning of the actual summoning. Soon after, many more people summoned all manners of spirits, with all different types of attributes. Satsuki, that girl, even summoned a middle class fiery lion; it was no small wonder that she ranked eighth among the freshmen – that was really something!

That bum, Yamada, managed to summon a low class boxing kangaroo spirit... with a wind type attribute. Wind type spirits had great speed, they could augment their masters movement speed and increase their masters' attack speed. To a battle technician like Yamada, a wind type spirit was the optimal choice.

Speaking of, there was also my fiancée, Kamiki Kuji. Since the day we had that conversation about the deal behind our relationship, I kept getting the feeling that she had been watching Satsuki and I closely, and her glare was constantly intensifying. Even when it was Satsuki who came over and leaned on me, in her mind she probably interpreted it as though it was me who was keen on Satsuki, and at the same time, wanted to marry her, the beautiful fiancée, right?

Anyway, Kamiki summoned a middle class monkey spirit, with a wind type attribute, which was completely different than the magic she wielded (fog and poison).

When I saw this, I was both astonished and sympathetic. This was because most of the time, summoned spirits would be of similar or complementary types to the summoners' magic; only in very rare cases could people summon spirits

with attributes contrary to their own magical abilities. I guess Kamiki was one among those very rare cases; that was indeed very unfortunate.

‘Kid, what are you talking about? Fog and poison, they benefit the most from wind type spirits.’

‘What do you mean by this? Um... Wait a second, fog and poison? Wind could change the direction of fog, and spread the poison... so it does seem like this combination is actually the most complimentary.’

‘That’s right, this actually is the best combination; what you people called the unfortunate few were just people who haven’t discovered the effectiveness of their own spirits.’

‘Freed, you are really amazing! But, are you really a high and mighty dragon god? How could you know so much?’ I thought Freed’s knowledge on spirit was astounding.

‘This, let me tell you! This, I have to tell you!’ Yalide just wouldn’t stop yelling.

‘Shush you, and go take a nap or something. Stop interrupting our conversation, you perverted dragon.’

‘I have to say it.’ Yalide was rarely this calm... could it be that Freed really had some secret that he couldn’t tell people?

‘Kid, don’t overthink this, don’t overthink this. Let’s stop this conversation now; we can talk some other day.’

‘Listen up, you, stinking brat! You and this white dragon were talking about me all day, about how lecherous I was, weren’t you? Well, okay, I’ll admit it; I really do appreciate sexy, beautiful female humans; of course, I also like beautiful female dragons. But, do you know, that Freed, he even...’

‘You, shut your mouth!!!’

‘...He actually likes spirits! He is a bona fide Spiritcon!!! It doesn’t matter to him if the spirit is big, or small; young, or old; male, or female, so long as it is a spirit, he’s obsessed with it. There was this one time, I heard him order...’

‘Stop it, stop it! Let’s not talk about the past!!!’

How come Freed was behaving just like Yalide right there? Could it really be

true that he was a Spiritcon? But, this shouldn't matter, right? Being a dragon god, shouldn't it be pretty normal to care deeply about spirits?

'Right, right, right, right you are, kid; it was totally worth it for me to help you through hell and high water.'

'Brat! Why? Why? Why can't you wait till I am finished before you draw your conclusion? Why is it that you can think so highly of Freed and so poorly of me? Let's just think about this for a moment: those are spirits we are talking about; never mind the age gap, just from body size differences alone... Wait, this would be like a grown man with a little loli!!! Oh, hurry up and think better of me too. Since I am a dragon god, isn't it normal for me to like sexy, beautiful, female humans?'

'Why don't you listen to yourself and take your own advice? "Never mind the age gap, just from body size differences alone"... are you really in a position to talk about Freed? It is really difficult for me think any better of you, Yalide, considering your obsession with beautiful female humans. Besides... you really are lewd... if you were a human, my bet is that you would have been a wanted rapist by now...'

'That's right! You are fantastic, kid! How fortunate am I to be able to inhabit your body? I now solemnly take back all the things I said about you being stupid!'

'Errr... thank you? Ahem, "Spirit-obsessing-Freed"? Don't you get any funny ideas towards Silent Water.'

'Kid, like you said, I am a dragon god; my concern towards spirits is based purely out of love! Love, don't you understand? It is completely different than Yalide, whose feelings towards female humans are filled with lewd thoughts...'

'I wonder just who it was that routinely ordered those spirits to call himself "My Lord Dragon God"! You pervert!!!' Yalide became angry.

'I...' Freed became speechless.

This... I was stunned, I couldn't believe that Freed...

'Actually...' Just when I was about to defend Freed, someone shoved me.

When I turned around, I saw Satsuki; for some reasons, her alluring eyes were

looking at me with sympathy.

‘Lin Xiang, don’t give up, keep going, you can do it, your spirit will come, for sure.’ She comforted me gently.

When I zoned out in my conversation with Freed, it must have appeared to her as though I was down in the dumps because I couldn’t summon any spirits?

If it was before, I might have been really depressed about it. But! I had already formed a contract with Silent Water, and she was a king class level spirit to boot! King class! How could I possibly be depressed?

Of course, I couldn’t tell Satsuki all these exciting news. So I simply smiled and said, “Nothing to worry about, Satsuki. Actually, my summoned spirit said that it was expecting guests at home today, so it couldn’t make it here; that’s why it’s a no-show.”

“Lin Xiang...” Satsuki’s alluring eyes started to mist up. I really didn’t understand this girl; clearly, it was me, not her, who couldn’t summon any spirits, so why on earth was she crying? It made me agitated.

“Don’t cry, don’t cry, please, I beg you, my dear Miss Satsuki. Please, please, please don’t cry! Oh, where’s your spirit? Wow, isn’t it too big? It isn’t a dog, is it? Wait, what, a lion? And how could this possibly be? It has a fiery tail and it’s burning hot.”

“It’s a fire type spirit, so of course there’s fire; besides, when have you ever seen a normal dog all fiery and burning hot?”

“HOT DOG.”

“Pfff~” Satsuki laughed and cracked a beautiful smile.

“That’s right, you should smile more; the more you smile, the prettier you look. Here, let me pat your spirit... Wow!!! Amazing! Can I ride it, like a horse? It won’t take a bite out of me, right...”

————— Classroom

“Well, with the exception of a certain individual, the Spirit Summoning this time around has been quite successful.” The homeroom teacher glared at me when he mentioned “a certain individual”.

Needless to say, all the students in class, except for me, had all successfully formed contracts with spirits. This was on par with everyone's expectations.

"As for that certain individual, I didn't have high hopes, and I certainly didn't expect him to summon an amazing spirit. HOWEVER, to not even be able to summon a single spirit?! Is this a joke?! Since the school's founding a hundred years ago, the school had overcome many difficulties and challenges, but never in the school's history had the school encountered such a sorry excuse of a student who couldn't even summon a single spirit. Well, then, Mr. Incompetent! Stand up, please! Please, explain yourself to your classmates, and to me, the reason – WHY – you couldn't summon – even – ONE – SINGLE – spirit!!!" The homeroom teacher sounded real agitated. It looked like he was truly angry. Well, to be fair, having a student not being able to summon a single spirit, this had to be a first for the school.

Helplessly, I stood up, and said nothing. What could I possibly say? I wasn't in my best condition? I didn't have enough time? Or maybe I could say something along the line: "since I have already formed a contract with a king class spirit, those other inferior spirits are beneath me", and let everyone laugh at my silly jokes?

Silence is golden. Besides, this homeroom teacher never did like me and I couldn't care less, so I let him yell at me and just chatted with Freed and Yalide to while the time away.

'What should we have for dinner tonight? To celebrate Silent Water and I forming a contract, I am going to make something.'

'Make whatever you like. After all, you are the one who would be eating it.'

'How about getting some books?' Yalide suggested.

'Books?' Since when did he start to enjoy reading books?

'Since when I first saw the book called "The H Lifestyle between My Master and I"! The girl on the cover was so beautiful, so sexy! I fell in love the moment I laid eyes on her.'

'Argh... kid, how about we chat about what we are going to do for dinner? How about silver carp?'

‘That’s is a pain to make, how about salmon?’

‘Hmm, that’s not bad. How about another dish too, like steak? The lowest class spirit should like steak.’

‘That’s not a bad idea.’

‘Hey!!! Don’t you dare ignore me! Want the book!!! I wanna read it!!!’

“So! Mr. Incompetent! You understand me now?” When I turned around, the homeroom teacher just finished with his “lecture”, and the clock in class showed that ten minutes had passed. After his long speech, other than the fact that his hair was a bit messier than usual, he wasn’t even short of breath or red in the face...

“I understand! What sensei said was right!” The moment I said it, Satsuki looked at me all nervous like.

What’s going on?

“Oh? You’ve grew a conscience as a useless piece of garbage? Or perhaps you’ve finally realized that you are incompetent and have decided to quit school? Since you are not completely unrepentant, I will help you with the preparation for quitting school.”

Oi, oi, oi, what just happened? Quitting school?

“Sensei, I....”

“I understand that right now, you are quite burdened by your guilty conscience. That’s why, I have decided to go to the headmaster’s office with you. You’re my student, after all!!!” This homeroom teacher, whatever his name was, Youtaku, or Yousetsu, he sounded like he was really sympathetic but he could barely hide the excitement on his face. Look, you could even see his lips curling up a bit, I am pretty sure he was smirking!

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## **Volume 2 Chapter 10 – Sympathy, Youtaku, Grandpa Mitsu**

“Lin Xiang... what exactly were you thinking? Wasn’t it just a spirit? Besides,

even though what Youtaku just said was a bit out of line, how could you even agree to quit school?” The moment class ended, Satsuki nervously tugged at my shirt to prevent me from following my homeroom teacher, whose name I just found out, to the principal’s office.

Argh... to admit that I wasn’t paying attention was just too lame. I couldn’t say it out loud. Besides, who would have thought that he’d ask me to consider quitting school?

“I... I won’t quit school, don’t worry.”

“But then... why did you agree with what Youtaku said?”

“I just... thought that what he said was outrageous, so I purposely agreed with him, just so I can go with him to the Headmaster’s and tell on him?” Lately, it felt like I could lie without batting an eye.

“So that’s how it is. But, try not to tell on him too harshly; after all he is our homeroom teacher. If you get on his bad side, he would make your life difficult.”

If I get on his bad side? Let’s just take away the hypothetical “if”. He didn’t like me to begin with. If we were in my old world, I would have beaten him up already.

“I understand, Satsuki. Thanks....”

“Hey! Trash-kun! Hurry up.” My homeroom teacher Youtaku returned and yelled at me.

I looked at Satsuki and gave her a smile; then under the nervous gaze of Satsuki and the scornful eyes and sneers of the rest of the class, I followed Youtaku out of the classroom to the headmaster’s office.

————— Headmaster’s Office

“KO~~KO~~KO~~(Knocking sound)” Youtaku knocked on the door and looked at me with a beaming smile.

“Come in.”

Youtaku opened the door. In the room, there was a woman sitting at a desk, putting together some sort of report.

“Assistant Yonechi, I am looking for the Headmaster. Is he in?”

The assistant, Yonechi, lifted her head from her work, took a look at us, and asked, “What is this pertaining to?”

“Nothing major, just a matter to do with this special student.”

“Special? How is it special?”

“His name’s Lin Xiang. He’s that poor kid who couldn’t summon any spirit during this morning’s Spirit Summoning Ceremony.” Was he looking at me with sympathetic eyes as he explained it?

“Oh? So that’s him? The Headmaster was actually thinking of looking for him, didn’t think you would bring him here. Go on ahead, the Headmaster is inside.”

“Hmm, I understand. Assistant Yonechi, thank you for your help.” Then, Youtaku turned around, gave me a very concerned look, and said, “Ah, Mr. Lin Xiang, I... I will try my best to put in a good word for you. Let’s just hope that the Headmaster wouldn’t be too severe in his handling of this...”

Strange, what the heck is this guy doing? Why the sudden change of character?

Just when I was suspicious of Youtaku and the drastic change in his attitude, I noticed Youtaku stealing glances at Assistant Yonechi. Ah! So, he was into her?

“Actually, as your teacher, it is partly my fault that you turned out the way you are. It is my...”

Does this guy plan to go on and on about this? Doesn’t he know just how disgusting this is? Doesn’t he realize that I, who have seen through his act, really want to beat him up?

“Let’s go in, shall we, my dear old teacher?” I interrupted Youtaku’s endless speech on how remorseful he was.

Youtaku glared at me and begrudgingly led me towards the room inside. After knocking at the door, we waited until we heard a voice from inside that room, saying “Come in”, before we opened the door and stepped inside.

The Headmaster’s Office was very big, occupying approximately a hundred square meters; the décor in the room was of the traditional classic style, with

quite a few antiques, and a lot of bookshelves.

Sitting in front of a giant, black desk, the Headmaster, Ijima Michita, was reading some documents in his hands.

“Headmaster.” Youtaku gave a respectful salutation. It gave me goose bumps all over.

“Hmm?” At this time, the Headmaster lifted his head, took a look at Youtaku, then at me, as I was standing right behind Youtaku.

With a smile on his face, he stood up. His demeanor gentle and kind as he walked over.

This was the second time I had seen him. The first time was when Meiko suspected that I was a demonic imposter and attacked me. At the time, he was observing me behind the scene to ascertain if I had any demonic power. Later on, after we had cleared the misunderstanding, he told me that he was an instructor and despite their age differences, was an old friend of my father, Lin Fan, the Battle Master. By the time I left Meiko’s office, he had even asked me to stop by and visit him often. Presumably, he must have been considering me like a grandson of sort; it would have explained why he was having such a gentle and kind expression on his face at this moment, right?

Regrettably, since that one time, I hadn’t come by to see him, and it had already been about two weeks? At the same time, I didn’t want people to think of me as a brown noser that kissed up to the Headmaster either.

Meanwhile, only heaven knew why Youtaku got excited all of a sudden. He ran up to the Headmaster, grabbed the perplexed Headmaster’s hand tightly and exclaimed, “Headmaster, even though I know I may have had some minor accomplishments, you didn’t have to stand up and greet me. In truth, as a Battle Elder, you are actually my idol.”

“Argh... you must be... Xiang-chan’s homeroom teacher?” The Headmaster was having a difficult time pulling his hand away from Youtaku’s grip.

“That’s right, that’s right. I am that trash’s homeroom teacher. Wait, what? Xiang-chan?” Youtaku had a look on his face like he couldn’t believe what he just heard.

“Trash?” The Headmaster also had a confused look on him.

“No... no... you misheard me. I was trying to speak in Lin Xiang’s native tongue, Chinese, ‘Tsi Tsai’. That’s right, it means an extraordinary talent, a genius!” As he was doing his best to smooth it over, Youtaku didn’t forget to throw me a thumb-up sign!

‘Oh, fuck! This human named Youtaku, he won. He is the winner for the grand prize that I give out for having the thickest skin in a thousand years. Kid, you have a very unusual teacher here.’ Freed gave me a wry smile as he offered his commentary.

‘...’ Youtaku’s ability to kiss ass blew my mind.

I have to ask, just who can lie without missing a beat, and utter such embarrassing lines in such a serious manner without turning red in the face? Eh? Wait, I just thought of something... I guess I could do that too?

“Is that right? I originally wanted to go and get Xiang-chan myself, I didn’t expect you to bring him over. You really saved me a lot of troubles. On the other hand, to have you, the homeroom teacher, bring him over here, did something happened?”

“No, nothing of that sort. My being here is entirely because Lin Xiang’s performance in school has been stellar, and today, due to some minor issue, it resulted in him being unable to summon any spirits and has caused him to be quite disheartened. It is such a pity. So! For the sake of his bright future! I have decided to bring him over to the Headmaster’s Office and hope that the Headmaster can give him a bit of encouragement, and help him pull himself together! I have already given him some advice, but he is still the same; to have to bring him here, it really was my last resort....”

‘Motherfucker, please! This human... is he for real? What do I have to do in order to be like him, to be able to lie so smoothly, so righteously? This... even exceeds the level of that shameless Yalide.’

‘Damn Freed!!! You think that you are all that just because you know a few swear words? Who are you calling “shameless”? Besides, how could you compare me, a great dragon god, with such a low-class human?’

'I apologize! To compare him to you was definitely an insult to him.'

'You got that right... Ack?! Motherfucker!!!'

"Oh, in that case, I have to thank you for your effort. You can go on ahead and head back, I need to have a good long chat with Xiang-chan." The Headmaster gave Youtaku a pat on the shoulder, and that made Youtaku really happy and excited. Right away, he gave an exaggerated ceremonial bow to the Headmaster and left the Principal's Office, but not before he said to me, "Lin Xiang-kun! What's past is past, don't dwell on it. Let's work hard for a better tomorrow! Hahahah..."

He was afraid that I would tell on him, wasn't it? Oho... I couldn't be bothered.

"Xiang-chan, sit down." After the Headmaster sat himself down, he gestured towards the sofa seat in front of him.

"When I sat down, he poured me some tea. After we had some tea, he gave me a gentle smile and said, "Actually, you don't have to worry about it so much. To tell you the truth, when I first heard about this, I was quite shocked. After all, this was the first time that something like this had happened.

Of course, this was the first time something like this had happened. Let's be honest, who in their right minds would do nothing at all during the summoning ceremony? All the students would have been betting their lives to sense, to summon, and to form contracts. Naturally, there wouldn't have been anyone who didn't manage to summon any spirits.

"But, you don't have to dwell on it. It is probably because the ability within your body hasn't fully awakened yet. Isn't there a saying, 'the apple doesn't fall far from the tree'? I believe your ability won't be that much weaker than that powerful father of yours. You just need to believe in yourself."

"I understand... Headmaster."

"Hmm?" The "hmm" the Headmaster uttered sounded unhappy.

"Grandpa Mitsu..." I suddenly remembered that he had asked me previously to call him Grandpa Mitsu when no one was around.

"Ah... Xiang-chan, do you have something you couldn't quite tell people

about?”

“No.” What did he mean by that?

“Don’t take what your grandpa’s about to say the wrong way. Even given the fact that your spiritual ability is a bit different than other people, it is still just too weak. Could it be because there are some other factors affecting it?”

“Er....” He wasn’t talking about the dragons’ power, was he? Freed had said it before, people with high level of ability could sense the dragons’ power in my body. It was kind of like last time, how Meiko, who was at the level of a Magus, was able to sense the subtle change in my body’s spiritual aura, and as a result, suspected me to be a demon. I guess that was because of the dragons’ power, right?

“You are unsure about it also? Oh well, no matter. In this world, a person’s ability is very important, but it is no more important than people’s feelings and relationships that they have with one another. So rest assured, Grandpa won’t make your life difficult, and won’t speak poorly of you. Quite the opposite, I am going to make sure that you won’t have anything to worry about.”

“Thank you, Grandpa Mitsu.”

In this world where one’s spiritual ability determined everything, to have a Headmaster, who wanted his students to elevate their powers, utter these words, I was moved. I know that his kindness towards me wasn’t fake, and there was no need for him to fake it, since my parents both had died long time ago....

In fact, the reason I wanted to call you over was to talk this over with you so that you wouldn’t feel bad about this incident. But, it seems like you are not really that down about it. I am relieved to see that.”

“Erm, since it is about time for the next class, if there is nothing else, could I return to class?”

“Is it that bad to chat with me?”

“No, no.”

“Ho, ho! I was joking. Go on ahead, and do remember to come by and see me more often. Really, last time, when I told you to come visit me, I thought you’d

be here the next day. I couldn't believe that you had kept me waiting, and for two weeks at that."

"Hahah, I will definitely stop by and visit you more often." Feeling embarrassed, I gave him a strained smile.

-----

'That old human, Ijima Michita, is quite alright in my book.'

'Yeah, he was my father's instructor, as well as his good friend.'

'Human beings are rather intriguing organisms. They possess various different kinds of emotions and desires. They can be evil, but they can also be kind.'

'What you said there was really profound. Oh, right, Freed, it will be the weekend the day after tomorrow. Do I need to make any preparation before heading over to the Demon World?'

'No need for any preparation. Since I know you are not going to bring the water spirit, you won't need to get anything prepared. Yalide, the Demon World administrator, will be your guide and will help you avoid any demons.'

'Oh? That's really amazing.'

----- Classroom

Everyone stared at me as I walked into the classroom; it made me feel quite uncomfortable. Moreover, when Youtaku, who was lecturing the class on the key points on raising spirits, saw me, he immediately broke out his disgusting grin...

"Lin Xiang-kun, quick, hurry up and have a seat. Everyone! Let me tell you! You cannot bully Lin Xiang-kun just because he doesn't have a spirit. If I get wind of any of you bullying him, YOU can make a GUESS as to WHAT may happen to you."

The whole class was stunned, and this made me, who knew what had happened, want to laugh. Damn you Youtaku, the change in your attitude was a bit too drastic, wasn't it? Just a moment ago, you were yelling at me, calling me trash... but, thinking back on how he managed to twist "trash" into "genius". It was definitely hilarious.

When I got back to my desk, Satsuki gave me a cheerful look. Kamiki also took

a quick glance at me, but her gaze was filled with suspicion. ‘And all the male students were wondering, how come that piece of trash didn’t get forced out of school? Could it be that there is something going on between the Headmaster and him? Like forbidden love?’

Ack... About what the boys in class were thinking, it was subtext provided by that weirdo, Yalide who pretended to sound like a classmate.

Satsuki stealthily handed me a note, on it, it said, “... though I don’t know what had happened, I am just glad that you are alright. After class, you have to tell me the whole thing after class.

————— After Class

For some unknown reason, Satsuki came over the minute class was over and hung onto me tightly. All the other students in class who had just formed contracts with their spirits were summoning their spirits, so that they could improve their relationships with them, how come this girl didn’t need to do that?

“Lin Xiang... Xiang, could you tell me what happened?” There were some changes in Satsuki’s gaze. Didn’t it appear to be more affectionate than usual? Was that my imagination?

“Erm... How should I say it? Actually, my father was a student of Headmaster Ijima, and they were good friends with each other too.”

“Your father? Speaking of, I have never heard you talk about your father.”

“Err... My father’s name was Lin Fan....”

“He wasn’t that famous Battle Technician, Lin Fan, from thirteen years ago, was he?”

“... that’s right, one and the same. As you may already know, my father died in action, together with my mother...” Thinking of my father and my mother, it stung a bit. Even though I had traveled to this alternate reality, I was still living a life without parents....

“Xiang... say no more, I understand. Since your father and the Headmaster had such a good relationship, you didn’t get forced out of school because of Youtaku’s accusations and slander, right?” Being clever as she was, Satsuki

understood the situation right away.

“Right! If I had quit school, what am I supposed to do if I can’t see Satsuki anymore?” I smiled and pinched Satsuki’s button-like nose.

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)